

## CONTENTS

|   |                |
|---|----------------|
| <b>1. Rings</b>   | <b>1-57</b>    |
| 1.1 Ring  | 1              |
| 1.2 Examples of Rings   | 2              |
| 1.3 Some Properties of Rings  | 4              |
| 1.4 Integral Domain and Field   | 13             |
| 1.5 Basic Theorems of Integral Domains and Fields                                 | 17             |
| 1.6 Subring   | 21             |
| 1.7 Idempotent and Nilpotent Elements   | 28             |
| 1.8 Characteristic of a Ring  | 33             |
| 1.9 Ideals in a Ring  | 37             |
| 1.10 Simple Ring  | 53             |
| <b>2. Homomorphisms, Maximal &amp; Prime Ideals &amp; Principal Ideal Domains</b> | <b>58-117</b>  |
| 2.1 Homomorphism of Rings   | 58             |
| 2.2 Examples of Homomorphisms   | 58             |
| 2.3 Theorems on Homomorphisms   | 60             |
| 2.4 Quotient Rings and Fundamental Theorem of Homomorphism of Rings               | 68             |
| 2.5 Imbedding of Rings  | 75             |
| 2.6 Maximal and Prime Ideals  | 87             |
| 2.7 Divisibility in Rings, Prime and Irreducible Elements                         | 101            |
| 2.8 Principal Ideal Domain  | 108            |
| <b>3. Euclidean and Polynomial Rings</b>  | <b>118-171</b> |
| 3.1 Euclidean Domain (E.D.)   | 118            |
| 3.2 Polynomial Rings  | 130            |
| 3.3 Unique Factorization Domain (U.F.D.)  | 147            |
| 3.4 Primitive and Irreducible Polynomials   | 153            |
| 3.5 $R[x]$ as U.F.D.  | 171            |
| <b>4. Extension Fields</b>  | <b>172-212</b> |
| 4.1 Extension Fields  | 176            |
| 4.2 Field Adjunctions   | 179            |
| 4.3 Algebraic Elements and Algebraic Extensions                                   | 180            |
| 4.4 Roots of Polynomials  | 193            |
| 4.5 Constructions by Ruler and Compass  | 203            |

# 1

## Rings

In this chapter we shall introduce the concepts of *ring*, *integral domain*, *division ring* and *field* and give their examples and basic properties. We also discuss *subrings* and *ideals* of a ring.

### 1.1 Ring

**Definition 1.** A *ring* is a non-empty set  $R$  with two binary compositions denoted by  $+$  and  $\cdot$ , and satisfying the following properties :

R.1.  $a + b \in R$  for all  $a, b \in R$ .

R.2.  $a + b = b + a$  for all  $a, b \in R$ .

R.3.  $a + (b + c) = (a + b) + c$  for all  $a, b, c \in R$ .

R.4. There exists an element denoted by  $0 \in R$  such that

$$a + 0 = a \text{ for all } a \in R.$$

( $0$  is called **additive identity** or **zero element** in  $R$ )

R.5. For each  $a \in R$ , there exists an element  $b \in R$  such that

$$a + b = 0.$$

( $b$  is called **additive inverse** or **negative** of  $a$  and is written as  $b = -a$ , so that  $a + (-a) = 0$ )

R.6.  $a \cdot b \in R$  for all  $a, b \in R$ .

R.7.  $a \cdot (b \cdot c) = (a \cdot b) \cdot c$  for all  $a, b, c \in R$ .

R.8.  $a \cdot (b + c) = a \cdot b + a \cdot c$  (Left distributive law)

R.9.  $(a + b) \cdot c = a \cdot c + b \cdot c$  (Right distributive law)

$$\text{for all } a, b, c \in R.$$

We denote a ring as  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$ .

**Remark.** Axioms R.1. – R.5. mean that  $(R, +)$  is an abelian group and R.6. – R.7. mean that  $(R, \cdot)$  is a semi-group.

**Definition 2.** A *ring* is called **finite** or **infinite** according as it contains finite or infinite number of elements.

**Definition 3.** A ring  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  is called a **commutative ring**, if

$$a \cdot b = b \cdot a \text{ for all } a, b \in R.$$

**Definition 4.** A ring  $R$  is called **boolean**, if  $x^2 = x$  for all  $x \in R$ .

**Definition 5.** A ring  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  is called a **ring with unit element** or **unity or identity**, if there exists an element  $e \in R$  such that

$$a \cdot e = e \cdot a = a \text{ for all } a \in R.$$

**Definition 6.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity  $e$ . An element  $a \in R$  is called invertible, if there exists some element  $b \in R$  such that

$$a \cdot b = b \cdot a = e.$$

**Definition 7.** If  $n$  be a positive integer and  $a$  an element of a ring  $R$ , we define

$$a^n = \underbrace{a \cdot a \cdots a}_{n \text{ times}} \quad \text{and} \quad na = \underbrace{a + a + \cdots + a}_{n \text{ times}}$$

## 1.2 Examples of Rings

**Example 1.2.1.** The set  $\mathbf{Z} = \{\dots, -3, -2, -1, 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots\}$  of integers is a commutative ring under the usual addition and multiplication of integers. Here  $0$  is the additive identity and  $-a$  is the additive inverse of  $a \in \mathbf{Z}$ . Note that  $1 \in \mathbf{Z}$  is the unit element, since  $a \cdot 1 = 1 \cdot a = a \forall a \in \mathbf{Z}$ .

However,  $\mathbf{N} = \{1, 2, 3, \dots\}$  is not a ring. (Why?)

**Example 1.2.2.** The set  $\mathbf{E} = \{\dots, -4, -2, 0, 2, 4, \dots\}$  of all even integers is a commutative ring without unit element.

**Example 1.2.3.** The sets  $\mathbf{R}$  (all real numbers) and  $\mathbf{Q}$  (all rational numbers) are commutative rings with unity w.r.t. usual addition and multiplication.

**Example 1.2.4. (Ring of integers modulo  $n \equiv \mathbf{Z}_n$ )**

For any positive integer  $n$ ,  $\mathbf{Z}_n = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1\}$  is a commutative ring w.r.t. addition and multiplication modulo  $n$ , denoted as  $\oplus_n$  and  $\otimes_n$ , respectively.

In particular,  $\mathbf{Z}_2 = \{0, 1\}$ ,  $\mathbf{Z}_3 = \{0, 1, 2\}$ ,  $\mathbf{Z}_6 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5\}$  are rings of integers modulo 2, 3 and 6, respectively. In  $\mathbf{Z}_6$ ,  $2 \oplus_6 3 = 5$ ,  $3 \oplus_6 4 = 1$ ,  $4 \oplus_6 5 = 3$ ;  $2 \otimes_6 3 = 0$ ,  $4 \otimes_6 5 = 2$  etc.

It may be observed that  $\mathbf{Z}_2$  is a boolean ring, since  $0^2 = 0$  and  $1^2 = 1$  in  $\mathbf{Z}_2$ .

**Example 1.2.5. The Ring of Gaussian Integers  $\equiv J[i]$  or  $\mathbf{Z}[i]$ :**

$\mathbf{Z}[i] = \{m + ni : m, n \text{ are integers}, i = \sqrt{-1}\}$  is a commutative ring with unity  $1 (= 1 + 0i)$  w.r.t. the usual addition and multiplication of complex numbers.

**Example 1.2.6. The set of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices :**

$$M_2 = \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{bmatrix} : a, b, c, d \in \mathbf{R} (\text{all reals}) \right\}$$

is a non-commutative ring with unity, under the addition and multiplication of  $2 \times 2$  matrices. Note that  $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$  is the additive identity of  $M_2$  and  $\begin{bmatrix} -a & -b \\ -c & -d \end{bmatrix}$  is the negative of  $\begin{bmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{bmatrix}$ . Also  $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$  is the unity of  $M_2$ .

**Example 1.2.7.** The set  $S$  of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the ring  $\mathbb{Z}_2 = \{0, 1\}$  of integers modulo 2 is a finite non-commutative ring.

Indeed, the ring  $S$  has  $2^4 = 16$  elements viz.

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

**Example 1.2.8.** The set

$$M = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & a \\ 0 & b \end{pmatrix} : a \text{ and } b \text{ are real numbers} \right\} \quad \text{Q x 6}$$

is a non-commutative ring without unity, under matrix addition and matrix multiplication.

Notice that  $\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$ .

$\therefore \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \neq \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}. \quad \text{Q x 6}$

**Example 1.2.9.** The set

$$M = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -\bar{b} & \bar{a} \end{pmatrix} : a \text{ and } b \text{ are complex numbers} \right\}$$

is a non-commutative ring with unity, under matrix addition and multiplication. The unity of  $M_2$  is  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ .

Here  $\bar{a}$  denotes the conjugate of  $a$ . Notice that

$$\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -\bar{b} & \bar{a} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ -\bar{y} & \bar{x} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ax - b\bar{y} & ay + b\bar{x} \\ -(\bar{a}\bar{y} + \bar{b}x) & \bar{a}\bar{x} - \bar{b}y \end{pmatrix} \in M.$$

**Example 1.2.10.** Let  $R$  denote the set of all real-valued continuous functions on  $[0, 1]$ . Let  $f, g \in R$ . Define

$$(f+g)(x) = f(x) + g(x), (f \cdot g)(x) = f(x)g(x) \quad \forall x \in [0, 1].$$

Then  $R$  is a commutative ring with unity.

It is easy to verify that  $R$  is a ring, in which the additive identity is the zero function given by  $o(x) = 0 \quad \forall x \in [0, 1]$ .

Indeed,  $(f+o)(x) = f(x) + o(x) = f(x) + 0 = f(x) \quad \forall x \in [0, 1]$ .

$\therefore f+o=f \quad \text{for all } f \in R$ .

The additive inverse of  $f \in R$  is  $f_1 : [0, 1] \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$  such that

$$f_1(x) = -f(x) \quad \text{for all } x \in [0, 1]. \quad \text{We have } f+f_1=o.$$

$$\text{Further } (f \cdot g)(x) = f(x)g(x) = g(x)f(x) = (g \cdot f)(x) \quad \forall x \in [0, 1].$$

$\therefore f \cdot g = g \cdot f \quad \forall f, g \in R$ . Hence  $R$  is a commutative ring with unity  $I \in R$ , where  $I(x) = x \quad \forall x \in [0, 1]$ .

### 1.3 Some Properties of Rings

**Theorem 1.3.1.** If  $R$  is a ring and  $a, b, c \in R$ ; then

1.  $a + b = a + c \Rightarrow b = c$ . (Cancellation law w.r.t. +)

2.  $-(-a) = a$ .

3. The zero element of  $R$  is unique.

4. The additive inverse of any element in  $R$  is unique.

**Proof.** Since  $R$  is a ring, so by definition,  $(R, +)$  is a group.

1. By cancellation law in a group  $(G, \cdot)$ , we know

$$a \cdot b = a \cdot c \Rightarrow b = c. \quad \dots(1)$$

Since  $(R, +)$  is a group, so writing + for . in (1), we get

$$a + b = a + c \Rightarrow b = c. \quad \dots(2)$$

2. In a group  $(G, \cdot)$ , we know  $(a^{-1})^{-1} = a$ .

Since  $(R, +)$  is a group in which  $a^{-1}$  is denoted by  $-a$ , so by (2),

$$-(-a) = a.$$

3. Let, if possible,  $0$  and  $0'$  be two zero elements in  $R$ .

Then  $0 + a = a$  and  $a + 0' = a \forall a \in R$ .

In particular,  $0 + 0' = 0'$  and  $0 + 0' = 0$ .

(Take  $a = 0'$  and  $a = 0$  in (3), respectively).

Hence  $0 = 0'$ , which shows that the zero element in  $R$  is unique.

4. Let, if possible,  $a'$  and  $a''$  be two additive inverses of  $a$  in  $R$ . Then

$$a + a' = a' + a = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad a + a'' = a'' + a = 0.$$

$$\text{Now } a' = a' + 0 = a' + (a + a'') = (a' + a) + a'' = 0 + a'' = a''.$$

Hence  $a' = a''$ , which shows that the additive inverse of any element  $a \in R$  is unique.

**Theorem 1.3.2.** If  $R$  is a ring, then for any  $a, b, c \in R$ ;

1.  $a \cdot 0 = 0 \cdot a = 0$ .

2.  $a \cdot (-b) = (-a) \cdot b = - (a \cdot b)$ .

3.  $(-a) \cdot (-b) = a \cdot b$ .

4.  $a \cdot (b - c) = a \cdot b - a \cdot c$ .

If, in addition,  $R$  has a unit element  $1$ , then

5.  $(-1) \cdot a = -a$ .

6.  $(-1) \cdot (-1) = 1$ .

**Proof.** 1. We know  $a + 0 = a$  for all  $a \in R$ .

In particular,  $0 + 0 = 0$  and so  $a \cdot (0 + 0) = a \cdot 0$

$$\Rightarrow a \cdot 0 + a \cdot 0 = a \cdot 0 \text{ (left distributive law)}$$

$$\Rightarrow a \cdot 0 + a \cdot 0 = a \cdot 0 + 0.$$

Hence  $a \cdot 0 = 0$ , by cancellation law in the group  $(R, +)$ .

Similarly, we can show that  $0 \cdot a = 0$ .

## RINGS

2. We know  $b + (-b) = 0$  for all  $b \in R$ .

$\therefore a \cdot (b + (-b)) = a \cdot 0 = 0$ , by part 1.

or  $a \cdot b + a \cdot (-b) = 0$  (left distributive law).

Hence  $a \cdot (-b) = - (a \cdot b)$ .

Similarly,  $(a + (-a)) \cdot b = 0 \cdot b \Rightarrow a \cdot b + (-a) \cdot b = 0$ .

Hence  $(-a) \cdot b = - (a \cdot b)$ .

3. We have  $(-a) \cdot (-b) = (-a) \cdot c$ , where  $c = -b$

$= - (a \cdot c)$ , by part 2

$= - \{a \cdot (-b)\}$

$= - \{- (a \cdot b)\}$ , by part 2

$= a \cdot b$ , since  $-(-x) = x$  in  $R$ .

4.  $a \cdot (b - c) = a \cdot \{b + (-c)\} = a \cdot b + a \cdot (-c) = a \cdot b - a \cdot c$ , by part 2.

5. Suppose that  $R$  has a unit element 1. Then  $a \cdot 1 = 1 \cdot a = a$ .

Now  $a + (-1) \cdot a = 1 \cdot a + (-1) \cdot a = \{1 + (-1)\} \cdot a = 0 \cdot a = 0$ .

Hence  $(-1) \cdot a = -a$ .

6. Taking  $a = -1$  in part 5, we obtain

$$(-1) \cdot (-1) = -(-1) = 1.$$

**Notation.** In a ring  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$ , we shall now write  $a \cdot b$  as  $ab$ .

## EXAMPLES

**Example 1.3.1.** Show that the set  $R = \{a + b\sqrt{3} : a, b \in \mathbb{Q}\}$  is a ring under the usual addition and multiplication as binary compositions.

**Solution.** It is easy to verify that  $(R, +)$  is an abelian group with  $0 = 0 + 0\sqrt{3}$  as the additive identity and  $-a - b\sqrt{3}$  as the additive inverse of  $a + b\sqrt{3}$ .

Let  $x = a + b\sqrt{3}$ ,  $y = c + d\sqrt{3}$  and  $z = e + f\sqrt{3} \in R$ .

Then  $xy = (a + b\sqrt{3})(c + d\sqrt{3}) = (ac + 3bd) + (ad + bc)\sqrt{3} \in R$ ,  
since  $ac + 3bd \in \mathbb{Q}$  and  $ad + bc \in \mathbb{Q}$ .

Now  $(xy)z = \{(ac + 3bd) + (ad + bc)\sqrt{3}\}(e + f\sqrt{3})$   
 $= (ace + 3bde + 3adf + 3bcf) + (acf + 3bdf + ade + bce)\sqrt{3}$   
 $= x(yz)$ .

Finally,

$$\begin{aligned} x(y+z) &= (a + b\sqrt{3}) \{(c + e) + (d + f)\sqrt{3}\} \\ &= (ac + ae + 3bd + 3bf) + (ad + af + bc + be)\sqrt{3} \\ &= \{(ac + 3bd) + (ad + bc)\sqrt{3}\} + \{(ae + 3bf) + (af + be)\sqrt{3}\} \\ &= xy + xz. \end{aligned}$$

Similarly,  $(x+y)z = xy + yz$ . Hence  $R$  is a ring.

**Note.**  $R$  is a communicative ring, since  $xy = yx \forall x, y \in R$ .

**Example 1.3.2.** Show that the set  $I$  of integers with two binary compositions \* and o defined by  $a * b = a + b - 1$ ,  $aob = a + b - ab$  for all integers  $a$  and  $b$  is a commutative ring with unity.

**Solution.** We have  $a * b = a + b - 1 \forall a, b \in I$ .

From (1),  $a * b \in I \forall a, b \in I$ . ..(1)

Now  $a * b = a + b - 1 = b + a - 1 = b * a$ . Further

$(a * b) * c = (a + b - 1) * c = (a + b - 1) + c - 1$ , by (1)

$$\begin{aligned} &= a + (b + c - 1) - 1 = a * (b + c - 1) = a * (b * c), \text{ by (1)} \\ \therefore (a * b) * c &= a * (b * c) \quad \forall a, b, c \in I. \end{aligned}$$

We have  $a * 1 = a + 1 - 1 = a \forall a \in I$ , using (1).

Thus 1 is the identity in I.

Let  $a' = 2 - a$ . Then, by (1), we get

$$a * a' = a + a' - 1 = a + (2 - a) - 1 = 1.$$

Thus  $2 - a$  is the inverse of  $a \forall a \in I$ .

We now consider  $aob = a + b - ab$ .

From (2),  $aob \in I \quad \forall a, b \in I$ . ..(2)

Now  $(aob) oc = (a + b - ab) oc = (a + b - ab) + c - (a + b - ab)c$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} &= a + (b + c - bc) - a(b + c - bc) \\ &= ao(b + c - bc) = ao(boc), \text{ by (2).} \end{aligned}$$

$\therefore (aob) oc = ao(boc) \quad \forall a, b, c \in I$ .

Finally,  $ao(b * c) = ao(b + c - 1)$ , by (1)

$$\begin{aligned} &= a + (b + c - 1) - a(b + c - 1), \text{ by (2)} \\ &= (a + b - ab) + (a + c - ac) - 1 \\ &= (aob) + (aoc) - 1, \text{ by (2).} \end{aligned}$$

$\therefore ao(b * c) = (aob) * (aoc)$ , by (1).

Similarly,  $(a * b) oc = aoc * boc$ .

Hence  $\{I, *, o\}$  is a ring.

**Example 1.3.3.** If  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  be a ring with unit element, show that  $\{R, \oplus, \otimes\}$  is also a ring with unit element, where

$$a \oplus b = a + b + 1 \quad \text{and} \quad a \otimes b = a \cdot b + a + b \quad \forall a, b \in R.$$

**Solution.** We have  $a \oplus b = a + b + 1$ . ..(1)

From (1);  $a \oplus b \in R$ , as  $R$  is a ring and  $1 \in R$ .

Now  $a \oplus b = a + b + 1 = b + a + 1$ , since  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  is a ring.

$\therefore a \oplus b = b \oplus a$ , by (1).

Using (1) and associative law w.r.t.  $+$  in the ring  $R$ ,

$$(a \oplus b) \oplus c = a \oplus (b \oplus c) \quad \forall a, b, c \in R.$$

Since  $R$  is a ring and  $1 \in R$ , so  $-1 \in R$  is the identity in  $\{R, \oplus, \otimes\}$ .

For any  $a \in R$ ,  $a' = -a - 1 - 1 \in R$  is the additive inverse of  $a$  in  $\{R, \oplus, \otimes\}$ .

$$\because a \oplus a' = a + (-a - 1 - 1) + 1 = \{a + (-a)\} - 1 + 0 = 0 - 1 = -1$$

We have  $a \otimes b = a \cdot b + a + b$ . ... (2)

From (2);  $a \otimes b \in R$ , since  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  is a ring.

Using (2) and associative law w.r.t. ' $\cdot$ ' in the ring  $R$ , we get

$$(a \otimes b) \otimes c = a \otimes (b \otimes c) \quad \forall a, b, c \in R.$$

Finally,  $a \otimes (b \oplus c) = a \otimes (b + c + 1)$ , by (1)

$$= a \cdot (b + c + 1) + a + (b + c + 1), \text{ by (2)}$$

$$= a \cdot b + a \cdot c + a \cdot 1 + a + b + c + 1,$$

by distributive law in  $R$

$$= (a \cdot b + a + b) + (a \cdot c + a + c) + 1$$

$(\because a \cdot 1 = a)$

$$= a \otimes b + a \otimes c + 1, \text{ by (2)}$$

$$\therefore a \otimes (b \oplus c) = (a \otimes b) \oplus (a \otimes c), \text{ by (1).}$$

Similarly,  $(a \oplus b) \otimes c = a \otimes c \oplus b \otimes c$ .

By (2),  $a \otimes 0 = a \cdot 0 + a + 0 = a \quad \forall a \in R$ .

Hence  $\{R, \oplus, \otimes\}$  is a ring whose unit element is  $0 \in R$ .

**Example 1.3.4.** If  $E$  denotes the set of all even integers, then prove that  $\{E, +, *\}$  is a commutative ring, where  $a * b = ab/2$  and  $+$  is the usual addition.

**Solution.** It is clear that  $(E, +)$  is an abelian group in which  $0$  is the identity and  $-a$  is the additive inverse of  $a \in E$  ... (1)

We have  $a * b = ab/2$ .

(i) (Closure law). Let  $a, b \in E$  so that  $a$  and  $b$  are even integers. Then  $ab/2$  must be an even integer i.e.,  $a * b \in E$ , by (1).

(ii) (Associative law). Let  $a, b, c \in E$ . Then by (1), we have

$$a * (b * c) = a * \frac{bc}{2} = \frac{a(bc/2)}{2} = \frac{abc}{4}.$$

$$\text{Similarly, } (a * b) * c = \frac{abc}{4}. \quad \therefore a * (b * c) = (a * b) * c.$$

(iii) (Distributive law). We have

$$a * (b + c) = \frac{a(b+c)}{2}, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$= \frac{ab}{2} + \frac{ac}{2} = a * b + a * c, \text{ by (1).}$$

(iv) (Commutative law). From (1),  $a * b = b * a \quad \forall a, b \in E$ .

Hence  $\{E, +, *\}$  is a commutative ring.

**Example 1.3.5.** Prove that the set  $S$  of all ordered pairs  $(a, b)$  of real numbers is a commutative ring under the addition and multiplication compositions defined as

$$(a, b) + (c, d) = (a + c, b + d) \text{ and } (a, b)(c, d) = (ac, bd).$$

**Solution.** We have  $(a, b) + (c, d) = (a+c, b+d)$ .

It is clear that  $(S, +)$  is an abelian group in which  $(0, 0)$  is the identity, since  $(a, b) + (0, 0) = (a+0, b+0) = (a, b)$  and  $(-a, -b)$  is the additive inverse of  $(a, b)$ , since  $(a, b) + (-a, -b) = (0, 0)$ .

Let  $x = (a, b)$ ,  $y = (c, d)$  and  $z = (e, f) \in S$ .

Then  $xy = (a, b)(c, d) = (ac, bd) \in S$ . Also  $xy = yx$ .

It can be verified that  $(xy)z = x(yz)$ .

Now  $x(y+z) = (a, b)(c+e, d+f)$ , by (1)

$$= (a(c+e), b(d+f)) = (ac+ae, bd+bf)$$

$$= (ac, bd) + (ae, bf), \text{ by (1).}$$

$$\therefore x(y+z) = xy + xz.$$

Hence  $R$  is a commutative ring.

**Example 1.3.6.** Prove that a ring  $R$  is commutative if and only if

$$(a+b)^2 = a^2 + 2ab + b^2 \text{ for all } a, b \in R.$$

**Solution.** Let  $R$  be a commutative ring so that  $ab = ba$  for all  $a, b \in R$ .

Now

$$\begin{aligned} (a+b)^2 &= (a+b)(a+b) = a(a+b) + b(a+b), \\ &= aa + ab + ba + bb, \text{ by distributive laws in } R \\ &= a^2 + ab + ab + b^2, \text{ since } ab = ba. \end{aligned}$$

$$\text{Hence } (a+b)^2 = a^2 + 2ab + b^2. \quad \dots(1)$$

Conversely, let (1) be true for all  $a, b \in R$ . We shall show that  $R$  is commutative. From (1), we have

$$(a+b)(a+b) = aa + ab + ab + bb$$

$$\text{or } aa + ab + ba + bb = aa + ab + ab + bb, \text{ by distributive laws in } R.$$

$$\therefore ba = ab, \text{ by cancellation laws in } (R, +).$$

Hence  $R$  is commutative.

**Example 1.3.7.** If  $R$  is a system satisfying all the conditions for a ring with unit element with the possible exception of  $a+b = b+a$ , prove that the axiom  $a+b = b+a$  must hold in  $R$  and that  $R$  is thus a ring.

**Solution.** It is given that  $1 \in R$ . Consider

$$\begin{aligned} (a+b) \cdot (1+1) &= (a+b) \cdot 1 + (a+b) \cdot 1, \text{ by left distributive law in } R \\ &= a+b+a+b, \end{aligned} \quad \dots(1)$$

since 1 is the unit element in  $R$ .

Again

$$\begin{aligned} (a+b) \cdot (1+1) &= a \cdot (1+1) + b \cdot (1+1), \text{ by right distributive law} \\ &= a \cdot 1 + a \cdot 1 + b \cdot 1 + b \cdot 1, \text{ by left distributive law} \\ &= a+a+b+b, \text{ since 1 is the unit element in } R. \end{aligned}$$

From (1) and (2), it follows that

$$a+a+b+b = a+b+a+b$$

So  $a+b = b+a$ , by cancellation law in the group  $(R, +)$ .

Hence  $R$  is a ring.

**Example 1.3.8.** Let  $R$  be a ring such that  $a^2 = a$  for all  $a \in R$ . Prove that  $R$  is commutative.

**Solution.** It is given that  $a^2 = a \forall a \in R$ . ... (1)

Since  $a + a \in R$ , so  $(a + a)^2 = a + a$ , by (1)

$$\Rightarrow (a + a)(a + a) = a + a$$

$$\Rightarrow aa + aa + aa + aa = a + a, \text{ by distributive laws}$$

$$\Rightarrow a^2 + a^2 + a^2 + a^2 = a + a$$

$$\Rightarrow a + a + a + a = a + a, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$\Rightarrow a + a = 0, \text{ by cancellation laws in the group } (R, +) \quad \dots (2)$$

$$\therefore a = -a \text{ for all } a \in R. \quad \dots (3)$$

Let  $a, b \in R$ . Then  $a + b \in R$  and so  $(a + b)^2 = a + b$ .

$$\Rightarrow (a + b)(a + b) = a + b$$

$$\Rightarrow aa + ba + ab + bb = a + b, \text{ by distributive laws}$$

$$\Rightarrow a^2 + ba + ab + b^2 = a + b$$

$$\Rightarrow a + ba + ab + b = a + b, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$\Rightarrow ba + ab = 0, \text{ by cancellation laws in the group } (R, +)$$

$$\Rightarrow ba = -ab \Rightarrow ba = ab \quad \forall a, b \in R, \text{ using (3).}$$

Hence  $R$  is a commutative ring.

**Example 1.3.9.** If  $R$  is a ring with unity satisfying  $(xy)^2 = x^2y^2$  for all  $x, y \in R$ , prove that  $R$  is commutative. [D.U., 1994]

**Solution.** We have  $(xy)^2 = x^2y^2$  for all  $x, y \in R$ . ... (1)

Replacing  $y$  by  $y + 1 \in R$  in (1), we obtain

$$[x(y+1)]^2 = x^2(y+1)^2 \Rightarrow (xy+x)^2 = x^2(y^2+2y+1) \quad \dots (2)$$

$$\Rightarrow (xy)^2 + (xy)x + x(xy) + x^2 = x^2y^2 + 2x^2y + x^2. \quad \dots (2)$$

Using (1) and cancellation laws of  $(R, +)$  in (2), we get

$$xyx + x^2y = 2x^2y \text{ or } xyx = x^2y \quad \forall x, y \in R. \quad \dots (3)$$

Replacing  $x$  by  $x + 1$  in (3),  $(x+1)y(x+1) = (x+1)^2y$

$$\Rightarrow (x+1)(yx+y) = (x+1)(xy+y) \quad \dots (4)$$

$$\Rightarrow xyx + xy + yx + y = x^2y + xy + xy + y.$$

Using (3) and cancellation laws of  $(R, +)$  in (4), we get

$$yx = xy \quad \forall x, y \in R.$$

Hence  $R$  is a commutative ring.

**Example 1.3.10.** Give an example of a non-commutative ring  $R$  without unity such that  $(xy)^2 = x^2y^2 \forall x, y \in R$ .

**Solution.** Consider the ring  $R$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices :

$$R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \text{ are integers} \right\}.$$

Clearly,  $R$  is non-commutative, since

$$\text{and so } \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \neq \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

The possible unity  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \notin R$ .

Let  $X = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, Y = \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R$  by arbitrary. Then

$$XY = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, X^2 = \begin{pmatrix} a^2 & ab \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, Y^2 = \begin{pmatrix} c^2 & cd \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$\text{and } (XY)^2 = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a^2c^2 & a^2cd \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = X^2Y^2.$$

**Example 1.3.11.** Show that a ring  $R$  is commutative if and only if  $a^2 - b^2 = (a+b)(a-b)$  for all  $a, b \in R$ . [D.U., 1997]

**Solution.** Let  $R$  be commutative. Then  $ab = ba \forall a, b \in R$ .  
Hence  $(a+b)(a-b) = a(a-b) + b(a-b)$

$$= a^2 - ab + ba - b^2 = a^2 - b^2.$$

Conversely, let  $a^2 - b^2 = (a+b)(a-b)$

$$a^2 - b^2 = a^2 - ab + ba - b^2$$

$$0 = -ab + ba, \text{ by cancellation laws in } (R, +)$$

$$ab = ba \quad \forall a, b \in R.$$

Hence  $R$  is a commutative ring.

**Example 1.3.12.** Let  $R$  be a ring such that for  $x \in R$ , there exists unique  $a \in R$  satisfying  $xa = x$ . Show that  $ax = x$ . Hence deduce that if  $R$  has a unique right unity  $e$ , then  $e$  is the unity of  $R$ .

**Solution.** We are given  $xa = x$ .

We have  $x(a+ax-x) = xa+xax-xx$ , by left distributive law ... (1)

$$= x+xx-xx = x, \text{ using (1)}$$

∴

$$x(a+ax-x) = x. \quad \dots(2)$$

By the uniqueness of  $a$ , (2) gives us

$$a+ax-x = a \Rightarrow ax-x = 0 \Rightarrow ax = x.$$

(ii) If  $e$  is the unique right identity of  $R$ , then

$$xe = x \quad \forall x \in R.$$

By part (i),  $ex = x \quad \forall x \in R$ .

Hence  $xe = ex = x \quad \forall x \in R$  means that  $e$  is the unity of  $R$ .

**Example 1.3.13.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity  $1 \in R$ . Suppose for  $x \neq 0 \in R$ , there exists a unique  $y \in R$  such that  $xyx = x$ . Prove that  $xy = yx = 1$  i.e.,  $x$  is invertible in  $R$ .

**Solution.** Let  $xa = 0$ , where  $a \in R$ . Then

$$x(y+a)x = xyx + xax = x + 0x = x.$$

By the uniqueness of  $y$  in the relation  $xyx = x$ , it follows that

$$x(y+a)x = x \Rightarrow y+a = y \Rightarrow a = 0.$$

Hence

$$xa = 0 \Rightarrow a = 0 \text{ for each } a \in R. \quad \dots(1)$$

Again

$$\begin{aligned} xyx = x &\Rightarrow xyx - x \cdot 1 = 0 \\ &\Rightarrow x(yx - 1) = 0 \\ &\Rightarrow yx - 1 = 0, \text{ using (1)} \end{aligned}$$

$$\therefore yx = 1.$$

Similarly, we can show that

$$ax = 0 \Rightarrow x(a+y)x = x \Rightarrow a+y = y \Rightarrow a = 0, \quad \dots(2)$$

and so  $xyx = x \Rightarrow (xy - 1)x = 0 \Rightarrow xy - 1 = 0 \Rightarrow xy = 1$ , by (2)

$$\text{Hence } xy = yx = 1.$$

**Example 1.3.14.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity  $e$ . If for some  $x \in R$ , there exists unique  $y \in R$  such that  $xy = e$ , prove that  $x$  is invertible.

**Solution.** We have

$$\begin{aligned} x(e+y-yx) &= xe + xy - xyx = x + e - ex \\ &= x + e - x = e. \end{aligned}$$

By the uniqueness of  $y$  satisfying  $xy = e$ , we get

$$x(e+y-yx) = e \Rightarrow e + y - yx = y \Rightarrow yx = e.$$

Hence  $xy = yx = e \Rightarrow x$  is invertible.

## EXERCISES

1. If  $R$  is a ring and  $a, b \in R$ , prove that

$$(a+b)^2 = a^2 + ab + ba + b^2.$$

[Hint.  $(a+b)^2 = (a+b)(a+b) = a(a+b) + b(a+b)$ ]

2. Define a ring and give an example of (i) a non-commutative ring with unity, (ii) a non-commutative ring without unity, (iii) a commutative ring without unity, (iv) a commutative ring with unity.

[Hint. (i) See Example 1.2.6 ; (ii) See Example 1.2.8 ; (iii) The ring  $E$  of even integers ; (iv) The ring  $Z$  of integers.]

3. If  $a, b, c$  are any three elements in a ring  $R$ , prove that

$$(i) a(b-c) = ab - ac, \quad (ii) (a-b)c = ac - bc.$$

4. Prove that the set  $S = \{a + b\sqrt{2} : a, b \in Q\}$  is a commutative ring w.r.t. usual addition and multiplication.

5. Show that the set  $\{3n : n \in Z\}$  is a commutative ring w.r.t. usual addition and multiplication.

6. Let  $S$  be a non-empty set and  $F$  be the collection of all subsets of  $S$ . For any  $A, B \in F$ , define

$$A + B = A \cup B - A \cap B \text{ and } AB = A \cap B.$$

Prove that  $F$  is a commutative ring with unity.

[Hint. The additive identity in  $F$  is empty set  $\phi$ , since

$$A + \phi = A \cup \phi - A \cap \phi = A - \phi = A.$$

The additive inverse of  $A$  is  $A$ , since

$$A + A = A \cup A - A \cap A = A - A = \phi.$$

The unity in  $F$  is  $S$ , since  $AS = A \cap S = A \forall A \in F$ .]

7. If  $R$  is a ring such that  $a^2 = a \forall a \in R$ , prove that :

$$(i) 2a = 0 \forall a \in R, \quad (ii) a + b = 0 \Rightarrow a = b, \quad (iii) ab = ba \forall a, b \in R.$$

[Hint. (i) See Example 1.3.8 for (iii). By equation (2), we have

$$a + a = 0 \Rightarrow 2a = 0 \text{ and } a = -a.$$

$$(ii) a + b = 0 \Rightarrow b = -a \Rightarrow b = a.]$$

8. If  $a, b$  are any two elements of a ring  $R$  and  $m$  and  $n$  are any two positive integers, then prove that

$$(i) (m+n)a = ma + na, \quad (ii) m(a+b) = ma + mb,$$

$$(iii) m(na) = (mn)a, \quad (iv) (na)(mb) = (nm)(ab),$$

$$(v) a^m \cdot a^n = a^{m+n} \quad (vi) (a^m)^n = a^{mn}.$$

[Hint. (ii)  $m(a+b) = a + b + a + b + \dots + a + b$  ( $m$  times)

$$= (a + a + \dots + a) + (b + b + \dots + b),$$

$$\text{since } a + b = b + a$$

$$= ma + mb.$$

$$(iv) (na)(mb) = (a + a + \dots + a) (b + b + \dots + b)$$

$$n \text{ times} \quad m \text{ times}$$

$$= a(b + \dots + b) + \dots + a(b + \dots + b) (\text{n times})$$

(Left distributive law)

$$= (ab + \dots + ab) + \dots + (ab + \dots + ab) (\text{n times})$$

$$m \text{ times} \quad m \text{ times}$$

$$= (nm)(ab)]$$

9. If  $R$  is a commutative ring and  $a, b \in R$ , then for any positive integer  $n$ , prove that

$$(a+b)^2 = a^2 + 2c_1 ab + b^2,$$

$$(a+b)^3 = a^3 + 3c_1 a^2 b + 3c_2 a b^2 + b^3,$$

---


$$(a+b)^n = a^n + n_{c_1} a^{n-1} b + n_{c_2} a^{n-2} b^2 + \dots + b^n.$$

10. Let  $R$  be a ring such that for  $x \in R$ , there exists a unique  $a \in R$  such that  $ax = x$ . Show that  $xa = x$ . Hence deduce that if  $R$  has a unique left unity  $e$ , then  $e$  is the unity of  $R$ .

[Hint. Consider  $(a + xa - x)x = ax + xax - xx = x + xx - xx = x$   
 $\therefore a + xa - x = a \Rightarrow xa = x.$ ]

11. Let  $R$  be a ring and  $e \in R$  be such that  $ex = x \forall x \in R$ , then  $e$  is said to be a *left unity* of  $R$ . Show that if  $R$  has a unique left unity, then  $R$  has unity.  
 [Hint. Compare with Ex. 10 above.]
12. Let  $R$  be a ring and  $e \in R$  be such that  $xe = x \forall x \in R$ , then  $e$  is said to be a *right unity* of  $R$ . Show that if  $R$  has a unique right unity, then  $R$  has unity.  
 [Hint. See Example 1.3.12.]
13. Let  $a, b, c \in R$  be such that  $ba = b$  and  $a + c - ac = 0$ . Show that  $b = 0$ .  
 [Hint.  $a + c - ac = 0 \Rightarrow ba + bc - bac = 0 \Rightarrow b + bc - bc = 0 \Rightarrow b = 0.$ ]
14. Show that if  $1 - ab$  is invertible in a ring  $R$  with unity, then so is  $1 - ba$ .
15. Let  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  be a ring. Show that the system  $\{R, +, o\}$  is also a ring, where  $xoy = y \cdot x \forall x, y \in R$ .

The ring  $\{R, +, o\}$  is called the **opposite ring** of  $R$ , written as  $R^{op}$ .

#### 1.4 Integral Domain and Field

##### Definition 1. (Zero Divisor)

A non-zero element ' $a$ ' of a commutative ring  $R$  is called a **zero divisor**, if there exists some non-zero element  $b$  in  $R$  such that  $ab = 0$ .

##### Illustrations

1. In the ring  $M_2$  of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \neq O, B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \neq O, \text{ but } AB = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = O.$$

Thus  $A$  and  $B$  are zero divisors in  $M_2$ .

2. In the ring  $Z_6$  of integers modulo 6, 2 and 3 are zero divisors, since

$$2 \otimes_6 3 = 0 \in Z_6.$$

##### Definition 2. (Integral Domain)

A commutative ring is called an **integral domain**, if it has no zero divisors. Equivalently,

A commutative ring  $R$  is called an **integral domain**, if

$$ab = 0 \Rightarrow \text{either } a = 0 \text{ or } b = 0 ; a, b \in R.$$

Or

$$a \neq 0 \text{ and } b \neq 0 \Rightarrow ab \neq 0 ; a, b \in R.$$

##### Illustrations

1. The ring  $Z$  of integers is an integral domain, since for any two integers  $a$  and  $b : ab = 0 \Rightarrow a = 0$  or  $b = 0$ .
2. The commutative ring  $Z_6 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5\}$  is not an integral domain ; since  $2 \otimes_6 3 = 0$  but  $2 \neq 0$  and  $3 \neq 0$  in  $Z_6$ .
3.  $Z_5 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4\}$  is an integral domain, since  $a \otimes_5 b \neq 0$  for all  $a \neq 0, b \neq 0$  in  $Z_5$ .

**Definition 3. (Division Ring)**

A ring  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  is called a **division ring** or a **skew-field** if its non-zero elements form a group w.r.t. the composition ' $\cdot$ '.

**Definition 4. (Field)**

A commutative division ring is called a **field**.

Equivalently, A ring  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  is called a **field**, if its non-zero elements form an abelian group w.r.t. the composition ' $\cdot$ '.

The multiplicative identity of a field  $R$  is denoted by  $1$  and the multiplicative inverse of  $a \neq 0 \in R$  is denoted by  $a^{-1}$ , so that

$$a a^{-1} = a^{-1} a = 1.$$

**Note.** If  $R$  is a field, then  $a \neq 0 \in R \Rightarrow a^{-1} \in R$ .

**Remark.** The explicit properties of a field are given below:

A field is a non-empty set  $R$  with two binary compositions denoted by  $+$  and  $\cdot$  such that for all  $a, b, c$  in  $R$  ;

**A.1.**  $a + b \in R$ .

**A.2.**  $a + b = b + a$ .

**A.3.**  $a + (b + c) = (a + b) + c$ .

**A.4.** There exists an element  $0 \in R$  such that  $a + 0 = a \forall a \in R$ .

**A.5.** For each  $a \in R$ , there exists an element  $b \in R$  such that

$$a + b = 0.$$

**A.M.**  $a \cdot (b + c) = a \cdot b + a \cdot c$ .

**Example 1.4.1.** Q (all rationals) and R (all reals) are fields w.r.t. the usual addition and multiplication.

**Example 1.4.2.**  $Z_5 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4\}$  is a field w.r.t. addition and multiplication modulo 5.

The multiplicative inverses of  $1, 2, 3, 4 \in Z_5$  are  $1, 3, 2, 4$  respectively.

**Example 1.4.3.** For any prime  $p$ ,  $Z_p = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, p-1\}$  is a field w.r.t. addition and multiplication modulo  $p$ .

For the proof, see the corollary of Theorem 1.5.3. ahead.

**Example 1.4.4.**  $\{Z_6, \oplus_6, \otimes_6\}$  is not a field, since, for example,  $2 \neq 0 \in Z_6$  has no multiplicative inverse in  $Z_6$ .

**Example 1.4.5.** The set  $C = \{a + bi : a, b \in R\}$  of complex numbers is a field under usual addition and multiplication of complex numbers.

It may be observed that  $0 = 0 + 0i$  is the additive identity in  $C$ .  $-a - bi$  is the additive inverse of  $a + bi$ ,  $1 = 1 + 0i$  is the multiplicative identity in  $C$  and finally, if  $z = a + bi \neq 0 \in C$ , then

if its non-zero

zero elements

1 and the

denoted by

b) . c.

element

R.

R,

element

t. the

ulti-

y.

d

$$z^{-1} = \left( \frac{a}{a^2 + b^2} \right) - \left( \frac{b}{a^2 + b^2} \right)i = \frac{a - bi}{a^2 + b^2} \in \mathbf{C}$$

is the multiplicative inverse of  $z$ , since

$$zz^{-1} = \frac{1}{a^2 + b^2} (a + bi)(a - bi) = \frac{a^2 + b^2}{a^2 + b^2} = 1.$$

**Example 1.4.6.** The set

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ -\bar{x} & \bar{y} \end{pmatrix} : x, y \in \mathbf{C} \right\}$$

is a division ring, which is not a field.

We have seen in Example 1.2.9 that  $S$  is a non-commutative ring with unity  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$  under matrix addition and matrix multiplication. We now proceed to show that every non-zero element of  $S$  has its inverse under matrix multiplication. Let

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} a+ib & c+id \\ -(c-id) & a-ib \end{bmatrix} \neq \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \in S.$$

(Here  $a, b, c, d$  are not all zero)

Then

$$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{k}(a-ib) & -\frac{1}{k}(c+id) \\ \frac{1}{k}(c-id) & \frac{1}{k}(a+ib) \end{bmatrix} \in S, \text{ where } k = a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + d^2 \neq 0$$

Notice that

$$AA^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{k}(a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + d^2) & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{1}{k}(a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + d^2) \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = A^{-1}A.$$

Hence  $S$  is a division ring, which is not a field.**Example 1.4.7.** The set

$$Q = \{a_0 + a_1i + a_2j + a_3k : a_0, a_1, a_2, a_3 \text{ are real numbers}\}$$

where  $i^2 = j^2 = k^2 = ijk = -1$ ,  $ij = -ji = k$ ,  $jk = -kj = i$ ,  $ki = -ik = j$ 

is a division ring, which is not a field.

We define  $+$  in  $Q$  as follows :

$$\begin{aligned} (a_0 + a_1i + a_2j + a_3k) + (b_0 + b_1i + b_2j + b_3k) \\ = (a_0 + b_0) + (a_1 + b_1)i + (a_2 + b_2)j + (a_3 + b_3)k. \end{aligned}$$

It is easy to verify that  $(Q, +)$  is an abelian group.

The zero element in  $Q$  is  $0 = 0 + 0i + 0j + 0k$ , the unity in  $Q$  is  $1 = 1 + 0i + 0j + 0k$ , the additive inverse of  $a_0 + a_1i + a_2j + a_3k$  is  $-a_0 - a_1i - a_2j - a_3k$ .

Now we proceed to show that every non-zero element in  $Q$  has its multiplicative inverse in  $Q$ .

Let  $x = a_0 + a_1i + a_2j + a_3k \neq 0 \in Q$ , so that  $a_0, a_1, a_2, a_3$  are not all zero. Then  $l = a_0^2 + a_1^2 + a_2^2 + a_3^2 \neq 0$ .

Let  $y = \frac{1}{l} (a_0 - a_1i - a_2j - a_3k) \in Q$ . We see that (v)

$$xy = \frac{1}{l} [(a_0 + a_1i) + (a_2j + a_3k)] [(a_0 - a_1i) - (a_2j + a_3k)]$$

$$= \frac{1}{l} [(a_0^2 - a_1^2 i^2) - (a_2 j + a_3 k)(a_2 j + a_3 k) + (a_2 j + a_3 k)(a_0 - a_1 i)]$$

$$= \frac{1}{l} [(a_0^2 + a_1^2) - (-a_2^2 - a_3^2) + a_1 a_2 k - a_1 a_3 j - a_1 a_2 k + a_1 a_3 j]$$

$$= l/l = 1.$$

Similarly,  $yx = 1$ . Further  $Q$  is non-commutative, as

$$(2i + 3k)(j - 4k) = 2k + 8j - 3i + 12,$$

$$(j - 4k)(2i + 3k) = -2k - 8j + 3i + 12 \neq (2i + 3k)(j - 4k).$$

Hence  $Q$  is a division ring, which is not a field.

The ring  $Q$  is called the *ring of real quaternions*.

**Example 1.4.8.** The set  $R = \{a + b\sqrt{3} : a, b \in \mathbb{Q}\}$  is a field under usual 1. addition and multiplication.

It is easy to verify that  $R$  is a commutative ring and  $1 = 1 + 0\sqrt{3} \in R$  is the multiplicative identity of  $R$ . Finally, if  $x = a + b\sqrt{3} \neq 0 \in R$ , then its multiplicative inverse is

$$x^{-1} = \left( \frac{a}{a^2 - 3b^2} \right) - \left( \frac{b}{a^2 - 3b^2} \right)\sqrt{3},$$

since  $xx^{-1} = \frac{1}{a^2 - 3b^2} (a + b\sqrt{3})(a - b\sqrt{3}) = \frac{a^2 - 3b^2}{a^2 - 3b^2} = 1$ .

**Example 1.4.9.** Let  $C$  be the set of all ordered pairs  $(a, b)$  where  $a, b$  are real numbers. Let the compositions of addition and multiplication in  $C$  be defined as

$$(a, b) + (c, d) = (a + c, b + d), \quad \dots(1)$$

$$(a, b) \cdot (c, d) = (ac - bd, bc + ad). \quad \dots(2)$$

Then  $C$  is a field.

From (1), we see that

$$(i) (a, b) + (c, d) = (a + c, b + d) \in C.$$

$$(ii) (a, b) + (c, d) = (c, d) + (a, b). \quad [\because a + c = c + a, b + d = d +$$

$$(iii) (a, b) + (0, 0) = (a + 0, b + 0) = (a, b) \quad \forall (a, b) \in C.$$

Thus  $(0, 0)$  is the additive identity in  $C$ .

$$(iv) (a, b) + (-a, -b) = (a - a, b - b) = (0, 0).$$

Thus  $(-a, -b)$  is the additive inverse of  $(a, b)$ .

PROOF

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{Let } \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n \in \mathbb{Z} \text{ such that } \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = 0 \\ & \quad \Rightarrow \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n - \alpha_1 + \alpha_1 \\ & \quad \Rightarrow \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n - \alpha_1 + \alpha_1 \end{aligned}$$

PROOF BY INDUCTION

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{Let } \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n \in \mathbb{Z} \text{ such that } \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = 0 \\ & \quad \Rightarrow \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n - \alpha_1 + \alpha_1 \end{aligned}$$

PROOF BY INDUCTION: PROOF BY INDUCTION

PROOF BY INDUCTION: PROOF BY INDUCTION

$$\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n - \alpha_1 + \alpha_1$$

PROOF BY INDUCTION: PROOF BY INDUCTION

$$\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n - \alpha_1 + \alpha_1$$

PROOF BY INDUCTION: PROOF BY INDUCTION

## RINGS

$$\begin{aligned}
 (v) \quad & \{(a, b) + (c, d)\} + (e, f) = (a + c, b + d) + (e, f) \\
 & = ((a + c) + e, (b + d) + f) = (a + (c + e), b + (d + f)) \\
 & = (a, b) + (c + e, d + f) = (a, b) + \{(c, d) + (e, f)\}.
 \end{aligned}$$

From (2), we have

- (vi)  $(a, b) \cdot (c, d) \in C$ .  $[ \because ac = ca, bd = db ]$
- (vii)  $(a, b) \cdot (c, d) = (c, d) \cdot (a, b)$ .
- (viii)  $(a, b) \cdot (1, 0) = (a \cdot 1 - b \cdot 0, b \cdot 1 + a \cdot 0) = (a, b) \forall (a, b) \in C$ .

Thus  $(1, 0)$  is the multiplicative identity in  $C$ .

- (ix) For  $(a, b) \neq (0, 0) \in C$ , the multiplicative inverse of  $(a, b)$  is

$$(a, b)^{-1} = \left( \frac{a}{a^2 + b^2}, \frac{-b}{a^2 + b^2} \right).$$

Using (1) and (2), it can be verified that if

$x = (a, b)$ ,  $y = (c, d)$  and  $z = (e, f) \in C$ , then

- (x)  $x \cdot (y \cdot z) = (x \cdot y) \cdot z$ , and
- (xi)  $x \cdot (y + z) = x \cdot y + x \cdot z$ .

Hence  $C$  is a field.

## 1.5 Basic Theorems of Integral Domains and Fields

**Theorem 1.5.1.** Let  $R$  be a commutative ring. Then  $R$  is an integral domain if and only if  $ab = ac \Rightarrow b = c$ , where  $a, b, c \in R$  and  $a \neq 0$ .

**Proof. Condition is necessary**

Let  $R$  be an integral domain. Let  $ab = ac ; a, b, c \in R$ .

$$\text{Then } ab - ac = 0 \quad \dots(1)$$

$$\Rightarrow a(b - c) = 0.$$

Since  $R$  is an integral domain, it follows from (1),  
either  $a = 0$  or  $b - c = 0$ .

It is given that  $a \neq 0$  and so  $b - c = 0$ . Hence  $b = c$ .

**Condition is sufficient**  $\dots(2)$

$$\text{Let } ab = ac \Rightarrow b = c, \forall a, b, c \in R \text{ and } a \neq 0.$$

We have to show that  $R$  is an integral domain. Firstly we prove that  $R$  has no zero divisors.

Let  $x, y \in R$  be such that  $xy = 0$ .

If  $x \neq 0$ , then  $xy = 0 \Rightarrow xy = x0 \Rightarrow y = 0$ , by (2)

Similarly, if  $y \neq 0$ , then  $xy = 0 \Rightarrow x = 0$ .

Thus  $R$  has no zero divisors. Since  $R$  is a commutative ring, it follows that  $R$  is an integral domain.

**Remark.** Cancellation law may not hold in an arbitrary ring.

Let  $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ ,  $B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$  and  $C = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$  be three elements in the ring  $M_2$  of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers. Then

$$AC = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix},$$

$$BC = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}.$$

Thus  $AC = BC$ , but  $A \neq B$ .

**Theorem 1.5.2.** Prove that every field is an integral domain.

**Proof.** Let  $R$  be any field.

Let  $ab = ac$ , where  $a, b, c \in R$  and  $a \neq 0$ .

Since  $a \neq 0 \in R$ ,  $a^{-1} \in R$  exists and  $aa^{-1} = a^{-1}a = 1$ .

Now  $ab = ac \Rightarrow a^{-1}(ab) = a^{-1}(ac)$

$\Rightarrow (a^{-1}a)b = (a^{-1}a)c$ , by associative law

$\Rightarrow 1b = 1c \Rightarrow b = c$ .

Thus  $R$  is a commutative ring in which

$$ab = ac \Rightarrow b = c \quad (a, b, c \in R, a \neq 0).$$

Hence  $R$  is an integral domain (See Theorem 1.5.1).

**Remark.** The converse of the above theorem is not true.

For example, the set of integers  $\mathbf{Z}$  is an integral domain which is not a field, since  $a \neq 0 \in \mathbf{Z}$  does not have the multiplicative inverse in  $\mathbf{Z}$ .

**Theorem 1.5.3.** Prove that a finite integral domain is a field.

[D.U., 1999, 96]

**Proof.** Let  $R = \{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n\}$  be a finite integral domain.

In order to show that  $R$  is a field, we have to prove that  $R$  has the unity and that every non-zero element of  $R$  has its multiplicative inverse in  $R$ . Let  $a \neq 0 \in R$ . Then

$$ax_1, ax_2, \dots, ax_n$$

are  $n$  distinct elements of  $R$ , for if  $ax_i = ax_j$ ,  $i \neq j$ ;

then by cancellation law in  $R$ ,  $x_i = x_j$ , which is a contradiction.

Let  $r$  be an arbitrary element of  $R$ . Then by (1), we get

$$r = ax_l, \text{ for some } l \text{ satisfying } 1 \leq l \leq n.$$

Since  $a \in R$ ,  $a = ax_m$ , for some  $m$  satisfying  $1 \leq m \leq n$ , by (1).

We have  $x_m r = x_m (ax_l) = (x_m a) x_l$

$$= (ax_m) x_l, \text{ since } R \text{ is commutative}$$

$$= ax_l = r.$$

Since  $R$  is commutative,  $x_m r = r x_m = r \quad \forall r \in R$ .

It follows that  $x_m \in R$  is the unity of  $R$ . We write  $x_m$  as 1.

Since  $1 \in R$ ,  $1 = ax_p$ , for some  $p$  satisfying  $1 \leq p \leq n$ , by (1)

$$= x_p a, \text{ since } R \text{ is commutative.}$$

Thus  $ab = ba = 1$ , where  $b = x_p \in R$ .

This implies that  $a^{-1} = b \in R$ . Hence  $R$  is a field.

**Corollary.** Show that the ring  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  of integers modulo  $p$  is a field if and only if  $p$  is prime. [D.U., 1998]

**Proof.** Condition is necessary

Let  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  be a field. Let, if possible,  $p$  be not prime. Then

$$p = ab, \text{ where } 1 < a, b < p ; a, b \in \mathbf{Z}$$

$$\Rightarrow ab \equiv 0 \pmod{p} \Rightarrow ab = 0 \text{ in } \mathbf{Z}_p, \text{ where } a \neq 0, b \neq 0 \in \mathbf{Z}_p$$

$\Rightarrow \mathbf{Z}_p$  has zero divisors  $\Rightarrow \mathbf{Z}_p$  is not an integral domain.

This is a contradiction, since  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  is a field implies  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  is an integral domain.

**Condition is sufficient**

We know  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  is a finite commutative ring. Now we show that  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  is an integral domain.

Let  $a, b \in \mathbf{Z}_p$  be such that  $ab = 0$  in  $\mathbf{Z}_p$ . Then  $p$  divides  $ab$ .

$\Rightarrow p \mid a$  or  $p \mid b$ , since  $p$  is prime

$\Rightarrow a = 0$  or  $b = 0$  in  $\mathbf{Z}_p$

So  $ab = 0$  in  $\mathbf{Z}_p \Rightarrow a = 0$  or  $b = 0$  in  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  ( $a, b \in \mathbf{Z}_p$ ).

Hence  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  is a finite integral domain and so  $\mathbf{Z}_p$  is a field.

**Remark.** As an application of the above corollary, we see that

$$\mathbf{Z}_2 = \{0, 1\}, \mathbf{Z}_3 = \{0, 1, 2\}, \mathbf{Z}_5 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4\} \text{ etc.}$$

are all fields (finite).

**Ex.** What happens if the integral domain is infinite? [D.U., 1996]

An infinite integral domain may not be a field. For example,  $\mathbf{Z}$  (all integers) is an infinite integral domain, which is not a field.

**Theorem 1.5.4.** Let  $R$  be a ring such that the equation  $ax = b$  has a solution for all  $a \neq 0 \in R$  and for all  $b \in R$ . Show that  $R$  is a division ring.

**Proof.** Firstly, we show that  $R$  has no zero divisors, i.e., to show  $a \neq 0, b \neq 0 \in R \Rightarrow ab \neq 0$ .

Let, if possible,  $ab = 0$ ; where  $a \neq 0, b \neq 0 \in R$ . Then

$$abx = 0 \quad \forall x \in R. \quad \dots(1)$$

Since  $b \neq 0$ , so for any  $r \in R$ , there exists some  $x \in R$  such that

$$bx = r.$$

Using in (1),  $ar = 0 \quad \forall r \in R$ .  $\dots(2)$

Since  $a \neq 0$ ,  $ax = a$  has a solution, say  $c \in R$ . Then  $a = ac \Rightarrow a = 0$ . by (2).

This is a contradiction.

Hence  $R$  has no zero divisors i.e.,  $ab = 0 \Rightarrow$  either  $a = 0$  or  $b = 0$ .

Let  $x = e \in R$  be a solution of  $ax = a$ ,  $a \neq 0$ . Then  $ae = a$  and  $e^2 = e$ .  
We have  $a(e - e^2) = ae - aee = ae - ae = 0$ .

Using (3),  $e - e^2 = 0$ , as  $a \neq 0$ . Thus  $e^2 = e$ .

We now proceed to show that  $e$  is the unity of  $R$ . For any  $x \in R$ ,  
 $(xe - x)e = xe^2 - xe = xe - xe = 0$ , using (4).

It follows that  $xe - x = 0$ , as  $e \neq 0$ ; using (3).

$$\therefore xe = x \quad \forall x \in R.$$

Again  $e(ex - x) = e^2x - ex = ex - ex = 0$ , by (4).

$$\therefore ex - x = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad ex = x \quad \forall x \in R, \text{ using (3).}$$

Hence  $xe = ex = x \quad \forall x \in R \Rightarrow e$  is the unity of  $R$ .

Let  $a \neq 0 \in R$ . Then  $ax = a$  has a solution, say  $x = b \in R$ .

Then  $ab = e$  and  $(ba - e)b = bab - eb = be - eb = 0$ .

Using (3),  $ba - e = 0$ , as  $b \neq 0$ . Thus  $ab = ba = e \Rightarrow a^{-1} = b \in R$ .  
Hence  $R$  is a division ring.

## EXERCISES

- Prove that the set of all real numbers of the form  $a + \sqrt{2}b$ , where  $a, b$  are rational numbers is a field under the usual addition and multiplication.

- Define a ring and an integral domain. Give an example of a ring which is not an integral domain.

[Hint.  $\mathbf{Z}_6 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5\}$ ] is a ring, which is not an integral domain.

- Prove that every field is an integral domain, but every integral domain is not a field. Give an example of an integral domain which is also a field.

[Hint. The set  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers is an integral domain, which is not a field. The ring  $\mathbf{Z}_5 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4\}$  of integers modulo 5 is both an integral domain and a field.]

- Define a division ring and give an example of it.

- Give an example of a division ring which is not a field.

[Hint. See Example 1.4.6.]

- Show that the ring  $R$  of real-valued continuous functions on  $[0, 1]$  is an integral domain.

[Hint. Refer to Example 1.2.10. Consider

$$f(x) = \begin{cases} x, & \text{if } x \leq 0 \\ 0, & \text{if } x > 0 \end{cases} \quad \text{and} \quad g(x) = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } x \leq 0 \\ x, & \text{if } x > 0 \end{cases}$$

Then  $f \neq 0 \in R$  and  $g \neq 0 \in R$ , but  $fg = 0$ .]

- Tick the correct answer :

(i) An integral domain is a field.

(ii) A finite integral domain is a field.

- (iii) A field is an integral domain.  
 (iv) A division ring is an integral domain.  
 (v) A field is a division ring.
8. Show that a non-zero finite integral domain is a field. Give an example of a finite integral domain. [D.U., 1999]
- [Hint. See Theorem 1.5.3.  $\mathbf{Z}_5 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4\}$  is a finite integral domain]
9. Prove that the set of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the finite field  $\mathbf{Z}_3 = \{0, 1, 2\}$  is a finite non-commutative ring of order  $3^4 = 81$ , under matrix addition and matrix multiplication.
10. Prove that the set of all  $3 \times 3$  matrices over a finite field is a finite non-commutative ring under matrix addition and matrix multiplication. [D.U., 1994]

[Hint. If  $F$  is a field having  $n$  elements, then the required ring  $R$  has  $n^9$  elements. Further  $R$  is non-commutative, since  $AB \neq BA$ , where

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, B = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

11. Prove that a division ring  $R$  has no zero divisors.

[Hint. Let  $a, b \in R$  be such that  $ab = 0$ . If  $a \neq 0 \in R$ , then  $a^{-1} \in R$ .

$$\therefore ab = 0 \Rightarrow a^{-1}(ab) = a^{-1}0 \Rightarrow (a^{-1}a)b = 0 \Rightarrow 1.b = 0 \Rightarrow b = 0.$$

Similarly, for  $b \neq 0$ ,  $ab = 0 \Rightarrow a = 0$ .]

12. Show that a finite ring with unity and no divisors of zero is a division ring.

[Hint. Similar to Theorem 1.5.3]

## 1.6 Subring

**Definition.** Let  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  be a ring. A non-empty subset  $S$  of  $R$  is called a subring of  $R$ , if  $\{S, +, \cdot\}$  is a ring.

### Illustrations

1. The set  $\mathbf{E}$  of even integers is a subring of the ring  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers.
2. The ring of Gaussian integers  $\mathbf{Z}[i]$  is a subring of the ring  $\mathbf{C}$  of complex numbers.
3. The set  $S = \{0, 2\}$  is a subring of the ring  $\mathbf{Z}_4 = \{0, 1, 2, 3\}$  of integers modulo 4, under addition and multiplication modulo 4.

**Theorem 1.6.1.** A non-empty subset  $S$  of a ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$  if and only if (i)  $a - b \in S$  and (ii)  $ab \in S$  for all  $a, b \in S$ .

**Proof.** The condition is necessary

Let  $S$  be a subring of  $R$ . Let  $a, b \in S$ .

By definition of a ring,  $ab \in S$ .

Since  $(S, +)$  is a group, so  $b \in S \Rightarrow -b \in S \Rightarrow a - b \in S$ .

*The condition is sufficient*

Let the conditions (i) and (ii) be true. Consequently, for  $a \in S$ ,

$$a - a = 0 \in S.$$

Again  $0 \in S, a \in S \Rightarrow 0 - a = -a \in S$ .

Further  $a \in S, b \in S \Rightarrow a \in S$  and  $-b \in S \Rightarrow a + b \in S$ .

Let  $a, b, c \in S$ . Then  $ab \in S$ , by condition (ii).

Clearly  $a(bc) = (ab)c, a(b+c) = ab+ac, (b+c)a = ba+ca$ , are true, since  $S \subseteq R$ . Hence  $S$  is a ring and so  $S$  is a subring of  $R$ .

**Theorem 1.6.2.** *The intersection of two subrings of a ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$ .*

**Proof.** Let  $A$  and  $B$  be two subrings of a ring  $R$ .

Clearly  $A \cap B$  is non-empty, since  $0 \in A \cap B$ .

Let  $a, b \in A \cap B$ . Then  $a, b \in A$  and  $a, b \in B$ .

Since  $A$  is a subring of  $R$ ,  $a - b \in A$  and  $ab \in A$ .

[Theorem 1.6.1]

Similarly,  $a - b \in B$  and  $ab \in B$ .

So  $a - b \in A \cap B$  and  $ab \in A \cap B$ . Hence  $A \cap B$  is a subring of  $R$ , by Theorem 1.6.1.

**Remark 1.** *The union of two subrings of  $R$  need not be a subring of  $R$ .*

Two subrings of the ring of integers  $\mathbf{Z}$  are

$$A = \{\dots, -4, -2, 0, 2, 4, \dots\}, B = \{\dots, -6, -3, 0, 3, 6, \dots\}.$$

$$\text{Then } A \cup B = \{\dots, -4, -3, -2, 0, 2, 3, 4, \dots\}.$$

We see that  $3, 2$  are in  $A \cup B$ , but  $3 - 2 = 1 \notin A \cup B$ .

Thus  $A \cup B$  is not a subring of  $\mathbf{Z}$ .

**Remark 2.** Theorem 1.6.2 can be easily extended to an arbitrary family of subrings of  $R$ .

**Theorem 1.6.3.** *Show that the centre of a ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$ .*

**Proof.** The centre of a ring  $R$ , denoted by  $Z(R)$ , is defined as

$$Z(R) = \{a \in R : xa = ax \text{ for all } x \in R\}.$$

Clearly,  $Z(R)$  is non-empty, since  $0x = x0 \forall x \in R \Rightarrow 0 \in Z(R)$ .

Let  $a, b \in Z(R)$ . Then  $xa = ax$  and  $xb = bx \forall x \in R$ .

We shall show that  $a - b$  and  $ab$  are in  $Z(R)$ . ... (1)

Consider  $(a - b)x = ax - bx = xa - xb$ , by (1).

Thus  $(a - b)x = x(a - b) \forall x \in R \Rightarrow a - b \in Z(R)$ .

Again  $(ab)x = a(bx) = a(xb)$ , by (1)

$$= (ax)b = (xa)b, \text{ by (1).}$$

Thus  $(ab)x = x(ab) \forall x \in R \Rightarrow ab \in Z(R)$ .

Hence  $Z(R)$  is a subring of  $R$ .

**Theorem 1.6.4.** *Show that the centre of a division ring is a field.*

[D.U., 1997]

## RINGS

**Proof.** Let  $R$  be a division ring. The centre of  $R$  is defined as

$$Z(R) = \{a \in R : xa = ax \forall x \in R\}. \quad \dots(1)$$

By Theorem 1.6.3,  $Z(R)$  is a subring of  $R$ .

In other words,  $Z(R)$  is a ring. We have to show that  $Z(R)$  is a field.

Let  $a, b \in Z(R)$  be arbitrary.

Using (1),  $ax = xa \forall x \in R$ .

In particular,  $ab = ba \forall a, b \in Z(R)$

$\Rightarrow Z(R)$  is a commutative ring.

Since  $R$  is a division ring,  $1 \in R$  and  $1x = x1 \forall x \in R$ .

Thus  $1 \in Z(R)$ .

Finally, we show that each non-zero element of  $Z(R)$  has its multiplicative inverse in  $Z(R)$ .

Let  $a \neq 0 \in Z(R)$  be arbitrary  $\Rightarrow a \neq 0 \in R$ .

$\Rightarrow a^{-1} \in R$ , since  $R$  is a division ring.

Let  $x \neq 0 \in R$  be arbitrary, so that  $x^{-1} \in R$  exists. We have

$$a^{-1}x = (x^{-1}a)^{-1} = (ax^{-1})^{-1}, \text{ since } a \in Z(R) \Rightarrow ax^{-1} = x^{-1}a.$$

$$\therefore a^{-1}x = xa^{-1} \forall x \neq 0 \in R.$$

Obviously,  $a^{-1}0 = 0a^{-1}$ . Thus  $a^{-1}x = xa^{-1} \forall x \in R$ .

It means that  $a^{-1} \in Z(R) \forall a \neq 0 \in Z(R)$ .

Hence  $Z(R)$  is a field.

## EXAMPLES

**Example 1.6.1.** Show that the set

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}$$

is a subring of the ring  $M_2$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers.

**Solution.** Clearly,  $S$  is non-empty, since  $\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S$ .

Let  $A = \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S$  and  $B = \begin{pmatrix} c & 0 \\ d & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S$ . Then

$$A - B = \begin{pmatrix} a - c & 0 \\ b - d & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S, AB = \begin{pmatrix} ac & 0 \\ bc & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S.$$

Hence  $S$  is a subring of the ring of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers.

**Example 1.6.2.** If  $a$  is a fixed element of a ring  $R$ , show that

$$I_a = \{x \in R : ax = 0\} \text{ is a subring of } R.$$

**Solution.** Since  $a0 = 0, 0 \in I_a$  and so  $I_a$  is non-empty.

Let  $x, y \in I_a$  so that  $ax = 0, ay = 0$ .

$$\text{Now } a(x - y) = ax - ay = 0 - 0 = 0.$$

$$\therefore x - y \in I_a.$$

$$\text{Again } a(xy) = (ax)y = 0y = 0.$$

$$\therefore xy \in I_a. \text{ Hence } I_a \text{ is subring of } R.$$

**Example 1.6.3.** (a) Give an example of a ring with unity 1 which has a subring with unity  $1' \neq 1$ .

(b) Show by means of an example that a subring of a ring with unity may fail to be a ring with unity.

**Solution.** (a)  $M_2 = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} : a, b, c, d \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}$  is a ring with unity  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ . It is easy to verify that  $S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}$  is a subring of  $M_2$  with unity  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$ , since  $\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$ .

$$\text{Thus } \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \neq \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

(b) The ring  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers is a ring with unity.

But the set  $E$  of even integers is a subring of  $\mathbf{Z}$  without unity.

**Example 1.6.4.** Prove or disprove that subring of a non-commutative ring is non-commutative.

**Solution.** A subring of a non-commutative ring may be commutative. The ring  $M_2$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers is non-commutative, since

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

and so  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \neq \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ .

The set  $S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \in I \right\}$  is a subring of  $M_2$ , which is commutative,

since

$$\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} b & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ab & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} b & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

**Example 1.6.5.** Give an example of each of the following with justification :

(i) Ring which is not commutative but has a subring which is commutative.

(ii) Ring which has no unity but has a subring which has unity.

[D.U., 2000]

**Solution.** (i) Refer to Example 1.6.4.

(ii)  $R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}$  is a ring which has no unity. The possible unity  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \notin R$ . It can be verified that none of  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$  is a unity of  $R$ .

However,  $S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}$  is a subring of  $R$ , which has  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$  as the unity of  $S$ .

**Example 1.6.6.** Show that  $S = \{0, 2, 4, 6, 8\}$  is a subring of  $\mathbf{Z}_{10}$  with unity different from that of  $\mathbf{Z}_{10}$ , the ring of integers modulo 10.

**Solution.** We know

$\mathbf{Z}_{10} = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9\}$  is a ring with unity 1.

It can be verified that  $a \otimes_{10} b \in S$  and  $a \Theta_{10} b \in S, \forall a, b \in S$ . For example,  $4 \otimes_{10} 6 = 4, 8 \otimes_{10} 4 = 2$  etc. and  $8 \Theta_{10} 6 = 2, 2 \Theta_{10} 8 = 4$  etc.

Hence  $S$  is a subring of  $\mathbf{Z}_{10}$ , where the unity of  $S$  is 6.

[ $\because 6 \otimes_{10} 0 = 0, 6 \otimes_{10} 2 = 2, 6 \otimes_{10} 4 = 4, 6 \otimes_{10} 6 = 6, 6 \otimes_{10} 8 = 8$ ]

**Example 1.6.7.** What can you say about the sum of two subrings of a ring?

**Solution.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two subrings of a ring  $R$ , then their sum is defined as  $A + B = \{a + b : a \in A, b \in B\}$ .

We show by an example that the sum of two subrings of  $R$  need not be a subring of  $R$ .

Let  $S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}, T = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & c \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : c \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}$ .

By Example 1.6.1,  $S$  is a subring of the ring  $M_2$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers. Similarly,  $T$  is a subring of  $M_2$ . The sum of  $S$  and  $T$  is

$$S + T = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & c \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b, c \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}.$$

It is clear that  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S + T$ , but

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 4 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 \end{pmatrix} \notin S + T. \text{ Hence } S + T \text{ is not a subring of } M_2.$$

**Remark.** We have seen that

- (i) The intersection of two subrings of a ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$ .
- (ii) The union of two subrings of a ring  $R$  may not be a subring of  $R$ .
- (iii) The sum of two subrings of a ring  $R$  may not be a subring of  $R$ .

**Example 1.6.8.** Let  $e$  be idempotent in a ring  $R$ . Show that

$$eRe = \{eae : a \in R\} \text{ is a subring of } R \text{ with unity } e.$$

**Solution.** An element  $x \in R$  is called idempotent, if  $x^2 = x$ . ... (1)

We are given that  $e^2 = e$ .

Clearly,  $eRe$  is non-empty, since  $0 = e0e \in eRe$ .

Let  $x, y \in eRe$ . Then  $x = eae, y = ebe$  for some  $a, b \in R$ .

We have  $x - y = eae - ebe = e(a - b)$   $e \in eRe$ ,

since  $a \in R, b \in R \Rightarrow a - b \in R$  RINGS

Further  $xy = eaebe = eae^2be = eaeb$ , by (1)

$\Rightarrow xy = ere$ , where  $r = aeb \in R$

$\Rightarrow xy \in eRe$ . Hence  $eRe$  is a subring of  $R$ .

For any  $x \in R$ , we see that

$$ex = eea = eae = x, \text{ using (1)}$$

and

$$xe = eae = eae = x, \text{ using (1).}$$

$$\therefore ex = xe = x \quad \forall x \in eRe.$$

Hence  $e$  is the unity of  $eRe$ .

**Example 1.6.9.** Let  $R$  be a ring such that  $x^3 = x \quad \forall x \in R$ . Show that  $R$  is commutative.

**Solution.** It is given that  $x^3 = x \quad \forall x \in R$ .

$$\text{In particular, } (x + x)^3 = x + x \quad \dots(1)$$

or

$$2x \cdot 2x \cdot 2x = 2x \quad \text{or} \quad 8x^3 = 2x \quad \text{or} \quad 8x = 2x.$$

$\therefore$

$$6x = 0 \quad \forall x \in R. \quad \dots(2)$$

$$\text{Again, by (1), } (x^2 - x)^3 = x^2 - x \quad \dots(2)$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} x^2 - x &= (x^2 - x)(x^2 - x)^2 = x^2(x^2 - x)^2 - x(x^2 - x)^2 \\ &= x^2(x^4 + x^2 - 2x^3) - x(x^4 + x^2 - 2x^3) \\ &= x^2(x \cdot x + x^2 - 2x) - x(x \cdot x + x^2 - 2x), \text{ by (1)} \\ &= 2x^4 - 2x^3 - 2x^3 + 2x^2 = 2x \cdot x - 4x + 2x^2, \text{ by (1)} \\ &= 4x^2 - 4x. \end{aligned}$$

$$\therefore 3x^2 = 3x \quad \forall x \in R.$$

$$\text{Let } S = \{3x : x \in R\}. \quad \dots(3)$$

Then  $S$  is a subring of  $R$ , since  $3x, 3y \in S \Rightarrow 3x - 3y = 3(x - y) \in S$

$$3x \cdot 3y = 9xy = 3(3xy) \in S.$$

Let  $y \in S$  be arbitrary. Then  $y = 3x$ , for some  $x \in R$ .

$$\text{Now } y^2 = (3x)^2 = 9x^2 = 6x^2 + 3x^2 = (6x)x + 3x^2 = 3x^2 = 3x, \text{ by (2) and (3)}$$

$$\therefore y^2 = y \quad \forall y \in S.$$

Hence  $S$  is a commutative subring of  $R$ .

It follows that  $(3x)(3y) = (3y)(3x); x, y \in R$  [See Example 1.3.8]

$$\Rightarrow 6xy + 3xy = 6yx + 3yx \Rightarrow 3xy = 3yx, \text{ using (2).}$$

$$\therefore 3xy = 3yx, \text{ for } x, y \in R.$$

$$\text{Using (1), } (x + y)^3 = x + y \quad \dots(4)$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} x + y &= (x + y)(x + y)^2 = (x + y)(x^2 + xy + yx + y^2) \\ &= x^3 + x^2y + xyx + xy^2 + yx^2 + yxy + y^2x + y^3 \\ &= x + x^2y + xyx + xy^2 + yx^2 + yxy + y^2x + y, \text{ by (1)} \end{aligned}$$

$$\therefore x^2y + xyx + xy^2 + yx^2 + yxy + y^2x = 0. \quad \dots(5)$$

$$\text{Again } (x-y)^3 = x - y, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$\text{or } x - y = (x - y)(x^2 - xy - yx + y^2)$$

$$= x^3 - x^2y - xyx + xy^2 - yx^2 + yxy + y^2x - y^3$$

$$= x - x^2y - xyx + xy^2 - yx^2 + yxy + y^2x - y, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$\therefore -x^2y - xyx + xy^2 - yx^2 + yxy + y^2x = 0. \quad \dots(6)$$

Adding (5) and (6), we get

$$2xy^2 + 2yxy + 2y^2x = 0. \quad \dots(7)$$

Post-multiplying and pre-multiplying (7) by  $y$ , we get, respectively,

$$2xy^3 + 2yxy^2 + 2y^2xy = 0 \text{ and } 2yxy^2 + 2y^2xy + 2y^3x = 0.$$

Using (1), these equations, respectively, become

$$2xy + 2yxy^2 + 2y^2xy = 0, \quad \dots(8)$$

$$2yxy^2 + 2y^2xy + 2yx = 0. \quad \dots(9)$$

Subtracting (9) from (8), we get

$$2xy - 2yx = 0 \text{ or } 2xy = 2yx. \quad \dots(10)$$

Subtracting (10) from (4),  $xy = yx \quad \forall x, y \in R$ .

Hence  $R$  is commutative.

### EXERCISES

- Show that  $S = \{0, 2, 4\}$  and  $T = \{0, 3\}$  are subrings of the ring  $\mathbf{Z}_6 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5\}$  of integers modulo 6.
- Show that the intersection of an arbitrary number of subrings of a ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$ .
- Show that the set of matrices  $\left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & c \end{pmatrix} \right\}$  is a subring of the ring of  $2 \times 2$  matrices with integral elements.
- Show that a subring of an integral domain is an integral domain.
- Let  $R$  be the ring of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over reals. Show that

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & x \\ x & x \end{pmatrix} : x \text{ is a real number} \right\}$$

is a subring of  $R$  and has unity different from the unity of  $R$ .

[Hint.  $\begin{pmatrix} x & x \\ x & x \end{pmatrix} - \begin{pmatrix} y & y \\ y & y \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} x-y & x-y \\ x-y & x-y \end{pmatrix} \in S$ , and]

$$\begin{pmatrix} x & x \\ x & x \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} y & y \\ y & y \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2xy & 2xy \\ 2xy & 2xy \end{pmatrix} \in S.$$

The unity of  $S$  is  $\begin{pmatrix} \frac{1}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \\ \frac{1}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \end{pmatrix}$  and the unity of  $R$  is  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ .]

6. Let  $R$  be the ring of  $3 \times 3$  matrices over reals. Show that

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & x & x \\ x & x & x \\ x & x & x \end{pmatrix} : x \text{ is a real number} \right\}$$

is a subring of  $R$  and has unity different from the unity of  $R$ .

[Hint. The unity elements of  $S$  and  $R$  are, respectively

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1/3 & 1/3 & 1/3 \\ 1/3 & 1/3 & 1/3 \\ 1/3 & 1/3 & 1/3 \end{pmatrix} \quad \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

7. Show that the *normalizer*  $N(a)$  of an element  $a$  of a ring  $R$ :

$$N(a) = \{x \in R : xa = ax\}.$$

is a subring of  $R$ .

8. Let  $R$  be the ring of all real-valued continuous functions defined on  $[0, 1]$ . Show that the set

$$S = \{f \in R : f(a) = 0\}, \text{ where } a \in [0, 1]$$

is a subring of  $R$ .

[Hint. See Example 1.2.10. Let  $f, g \in S$ , so that  $f(a) = g(a) = 0$ .

$$\text{Then } (f - g)(a) = f(a) - g(a) = 0; (fg)(a) = f(a)g(a) = 0]$$

9. A non-empty subset  $S$  of a field  $\{F, +, \cdot\}$  is called a **subfield** of  $F$ , if  $\{S, +, \cdot\}$  is a field. Show that a subset  $S$  of a field  $F$ , containing at least two elements, is a subfield of  $F$  iff

$$(i) a - b \in S \forall a, b \in S, \quad (ii) ab^{-1} \in S \forall a \in S, b \neq 0 \in S.$$

## 1.7 Idempotent and Nilpotent Elements

**Definition 1.** An element  $a$  in a ring  $R$  is called **idempotent**, if  $a^2 = a$ .

**Definition 2.** An element  $a$  in a ring  $R$  is called **nilpotent**, if  $a^n = 0$  for some positive integer  $n$ .

**Remark.** If  $R$  is a ring with unity 1, then 0 and 1 are idempotent elements of  $R$  ( $\because 0^2 = 0, 1^2 = 1$ ). Further 0 is always nilpotent.

### Illustrations

1. In the ring  $M_2$  of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers,

$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$  are idempotent elements, since

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ etc. Further}$$

$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$  are nilpotent elements, since

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

Can you find

2. In the ring  $\mathbb{Z}_2$ , show that  $1^2 = 1$

3. In the ring  $\mathbb{Z}_5$ , find the elements

Exam  
domain  $R$   
domain ?

Solu  
 $1 \in R$ .

$\therefore$

He  
(ii)

other th  
an inte  
idempo

I

posse

$$a^n = 0$$

car

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

Can you find other idempotent and nilpotent elements in  $M_2$ ?

2. In the ring  $Z_4 = \{0, 1, 2, 3\}$  of integers modulo 4 ; 0 and 1 are the only idempotent elements and 0 and 2 are the only nilpotent elements. Notice that  $2^2 = 0$  in  $Z_4$ .
3. In the ring  $Z_{10} = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9\}$  of integers modulo 10 ; 0, 1, 5, 6 are the only idempotent elements and 0 is the only nilpotent element. Notice that in  $Z_{10}$ ,  $5^2 = 5, 6^2 = 6$ .

### EXAMPLES

**Example 1.7.1.** Prove that the only idempotent elements in an integral domain  $R$  with unity are 0 and 1. What happens if  $R$  is not an integral domain ?

**Solution.** Let  $x \in R$  be idempotent, so that  $x^2 = x$  i.e.,  $x \cdot x = x \cdot 1$  as  $1 \in R$ .

$\therefore x \cdot (x - 1) = 0 \Rightarrow x = 0$  or  $x - 1 = 0$ , since  $R$  is an integral domain.

Hence  $x = 0$  or  $x = 1$ .

(ii) If  $R$  is not an integral domain, we may have idempotent elements other than 0 and 1. For example,  $Z_{10} = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9\}$  is not an integral domain, since  $2 \neq 0, 5 \neq 0 \in Z_{10}$ , but  $2 \otimes_{10} 5 = 0 \in Z_{10}$ . The idempotent elements in  $Z_{10}$  are 0, 1, 5, 6. Notice that  $5^2 = 5, 6^2 = 6$  in  $Z_{10}$ .

**Example 1.7.2.** If  $R$  is an integral domain, then show that  $R$  does not possess any non-zero nilpotent element. [D.U., 2000]

**Solution.** Let, if possible,  $\exists a \neq 0 \in R$  such that  $a$  is nilpotent i.e.,  $a^n = 0$ , for some positive integer  $n$

$$\Rightarrow a \cdot a \dots a \text{ (n times)} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow a = 0, \text{ since } R \text{ is an integral domain.}$$

This is a contradiction. Hence the result.

**Example 1.7.3.** Show that in a ring  $R$ , a non-zero idempotent element cannot be nilpotent.

**Solution.** Let  $a$  be any non-zero idempotent element of  $R$ .

Then  $a^2 = a \Rightarrow a^3 = a^2 = a \Rightarrow a^4 = a$  and so on.

$\therefore a^n = a \neq 0$  for all positive integers  $n$ .

Hence  $a$  is not nilpotent.

**Example 1.7.4.** If  $a$  and  $b$  are nilpotent elements of a commutative ring  $R$ , show that  $a + b$  is also nilpotent. Give an example to show that this may fail if  $R$  is not commutative.

**Solution.** Since  $a$  and  $b$  are nilpotent, there exist positive integers  $m$  and  $n$  such that  $a^m = 0, b^n = 0$ . ... (1)

30

Since  $R$  is commutative, we can write

$$(a+b)^{m+n} = a^{m+n} + (m+n)_{c_1} a^{m+n-1} b + (m+n)_{c_2} a^{m+n-2} b^2 + \dots + b^{m+n}$$

$$= a^m \cdot a^n + (m+n)_{c_1} a^m a^{n-1} b + \dots + b^m b^n$$

$$= 0, \text{ using (1).}$$

Hence  $a+b$  is nilpotent.

(ii) The ring  $M_2$  of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the integers is non-commutative, where

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, B = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ are nilpotent, since } A^2 = B^2 = 0.$$

However,  $A+B = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$  is not nilpotent, since

$$(A+B)^2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } (A+B)^3 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Indeed  $(A+B)^n = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$  or  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$  for all positive integers  $n$ .

**Example 1.7.5.** Let  $R$  be a commutative ring and  $a \in R$ . Show that if  $a$  is nilpotent, then  $ab$  is nilpotent for each  $b \in R$ .

**Solution.** Since  $a$  is nilpotent,  $a^n = 0$  for some  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ .

Since  $R$  is commutative, therefore

$$\begin{aligned} (ab)^n &= a^n b^n \quad \forall a, b \in R \\ &= 0 \cdot b^n = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $ab$  is nilpotent for all  $b \in R$ .

**Example 1.7.6.** Let  $R$  be a ring and  $a, b \in R$ . Show that  $ab$  is nilpotent implies that  $ba$  is nilpotent.

**Solution.** Since  $ab$  is nilpotent,  $(ab)^n = 0$  for some  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ .

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Consider } (ba)^{n+1} &= ba \cdot ba \cdot ba \dots ba \quad (n+1 \text{ times}) \\ &= b(ab)(ab) \dots (ab)a \\ &= b(ab)^n a = b \cdot 0 \cdot a = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $ba$  is nilpotent.

**Example 1.7.7.** Show that  $\mathbb{Z}_6$ , the ring of integers mod 6, has no non-zero nilpotent element.

[D.U., 1994]

**Solution.** We know  $\mathbb{Z}_6 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5\}$ . We have in  $\mathbb{Z}_6$ ,

$$1^n = 1 \neq 0, 3^n = 3 \neq 0, 4^n = 4 \neq 0 \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}.$$

Further  $2^n = 2$  or  $4 \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $5^n = 5$  or  $1 \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}$ .

Hence  $\mathbb{Z}_6$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements. 0 is obviously nilpotent in  $\mathbb{Z}_6$ .

**Example 1.7.8.** If  $R$  is a ring with no non-zero nilpotent elements, then show that for any idempotent  $e \in R$ ,  $ex = xe$  for all  $x \in R$ .

**Solution.** Since  $e$  is idempotent,  $e^2 = e$ . ... (1)

For any  $x \in R$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned}(exe - ex)^2 &= (exe - ex)(exe - ex) \\&= exe(exe - ex) - ex(exe - ex) \\&= exe^2xe - ex^2x - exexe + exex \\&= exexe - exex - exexe + exex = 0, \text{ by (1).}\end{aligned}$$

It follows that  $exe - ex$  is nilpotent. As given,

$$exe - ex = 0 \text{ or } exe = ex. \quad \dots(2)$$

Similarly, we can show that

$$(exe - xe)^2 = 0 \text{ and so } exe - xe = 0 \text{ or } exe = xe. \quad \dots(3)$$

From (2) and (3),  $ex = xe \quad \forall x \in R$ .

In other words,  $e \in Z(R)$ , the centre of  $R$ .

**Example 1.7.9.** In a ring  $R$  without unity, show that every idempotent is a zero divisor but is not nilpotent. Suppose now that  $R$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements. Prove that any idempotent is in the centre of  $R$ .

[D.U., 1998]

**Solution.** (i) Let  $e$  be any idempotent in  $R$ , so that  $e^2 = e$ . Since  $R$  is a ring without unity, there exists some  $x \in R$  such that  $xe \neq x$ , for otherwise,

$$xe = x \quad \forall x \in R \Rightarrow e \text{ is the unity of } R,$$

which is contrary to the given hypothesis.

Now  $e^2 = e \Rightarrow xe^2 = xe \Rightarrow (xe - x)e = 0 \Rightarrow e = 0$ , since  $xe - x \neq 0$ . Hence  $e$  is a zero divisor.

Let, if possible,  $e$  be nilpotent. Then there exists a least positive integer  $n$  such that  $e^n = 0$ . ... (1)

Now  $e^n = 0 \Rightarrow e^{n-2} \cdot e^2 = 0 \Rightarrow e^{n-2} \cdot e = 0 \Rightarrow e^{n-1} = 0$ ,

which is a contradiction to (1).

Hence  $e$  is a zero divisor but is not nilpotent.

(ii) Refer to Example 1.7.8.

**Example 1.7.10.** Let  $R$  be a ring such that for each  $a \in R$  there exists  $x \in R$  such that  $a^2x = a$ . Prove the following :

(i)  $R$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.

(ii)  $axa - a$  is nilpotent and so  $axa = a$ .

(iii)  $ax$  and  $xa$  are idempotents.

**Solution.** (i) Let  $a \in R$  be any nilpotent element. Then

$$a^n = 0, \text{ for some positive integer } n. \quad \dots(1)$$

As given, for  $a \in R$ , there exists  $x \in R$  such that  $a^2x = a$ . ... (2)

From (2),

$$a^{n-2} (a^2 x) = a^{n-2} \cdot a \Rightarrow a^n x = a^{n-1} \Rightarrow a^{n-1} = 0, \text{ by (1).}$$

Again from (2),

$$a^{n-3} (a^2 x) = a^{n-3} \cdot a \Rightarrow a^{n-2} x = a^{n-2} \Rightarrow a^{n-2} = 0 \text{ and so on.}$$

Proceeding in this manner,  $a = 0$ .

Hence  $R$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.

(ii) We have

$$\begin{aligned} (axa - a)^2 &= (axa - a)(axa - a) \\ &= axa(axa - a) - a(axa - a) \\ &= axa^2xa - axa^2 - a^2xa + a^2 \\ &= axa^2 - axa^2 - a^2 + a^2, \text{ by (2)} \\ &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

It follows that  $axa - a$  is nilpotent in  $R$  and so by part (i),

$$axa - a = 0. \text{ Hence } axa = a.$$

(iii) It is clear that

$$\begin{aligned} axa = a &\Rightarrow axax = ax \text{ and } xaxa = xa \\ &\Rightarrow (ax)^2 = ax \text{ and } (xa)^2 = xa \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $ax$  and  $xa$  are idempotents.

### EXERCISES

1. Define nilpotent and idempotent element of a ring  $R$ . Find the idempotent and nilpotent elements in  $\mathbb{Z}_6$ , the ring of integers modulo 6. [D.U., 1999]

[Ans. 0, 1, 3, 4 are idempotents and 0 is nilpotent]

2. Prove that the only idempotent elements in a field are 0 and 1.  
3. Find the idempotent and nilpotent elements in  $\mathbb{Z}_5$ .

[Ans. 0, 1 are idempotents and 0 is nilpotent]  
4. Prove that the set  $S$  of all nilpotent elements in a commutative ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$ .

[Hint. Refer to Examples 1.7.4 and 1.7.5. Verify that  $a - b \in S$ ,  $ab \in S \forall a, b \in S$ .]

5. Prove that the following statements for a ring  $R$  are equivalent :  
(a)  $R$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.  
(b)  $a^2 = 0 \Rightarrow a = 0, a \in R$ .

6. Find the idempotent, nilpotent and invertible elements of  $\mathbb{Z}_{20}$ .

[Ans. {0, 1, 5, 16} are idempotents, {0, 10} are nilpotents, {1, 3, 7, 9, 11, 13, 17, 19} are invertible elements.]

7. Let  $a$  be an idempotent element in a ring  $R$  such that  $a + b - ab = 0$  for some  $b \in R$ . Show that  $a = 0$ .

[Hint.  $a + b - ab = 0 \Rightarrow a^2 + ab - a^2b = 0 \Rightarrow a^2 = 0 (\because a^2 = a)$ .  
Hence  $a = 0$ ]

### RINGS

#### 1.8 Characteristic

Definitio  
exists a positi

Definitio  
teristic of  $R$   
for all  $a \in R$

Definiti  
for each pos

Equiva  
n being any

Remai  
integral do

Illustration

1. char 7  
integ

2. char  
integ

3. char  
In g

integers 1

The  
 $R$  is eith

Pr  
Le

$na = 0$  f

N  
=

=

=

=

=

integ

cha

Wh

p ?

### 1.8 Characteristic of a Ring

**Definition 1.** A ring  $R$  is said to be of finite characteristic, if there exists a positive integer  $n$  such that  $na = 0$  for all  $a \in R$ .

**Definition 2.** If a ring  $R$  is of finite characteristic, then the characteristic of  $R$  is defined as the smallest positive integer  $p$  such that  $pa = 0$  for all  $a \in R$ . We write it as  $\text{char } R = p$ .

**Definition 3.** A ring  $R$  is said to be of characteristic zero, if  $na \neq 0$  for each positive integer  $n$  and for each  $a \neq 0 \in R$ .

Equivalently, if  $\text{char } R = 0$ , then  $na = 0$  for all  $a \in R \Rightarrow n = 0$ ,  $n$  being any positive integer.

**Remark.** The above definitions can similarly be extended to any integral domain  $R$ .

#### Illustrations

1.  $\text{char } \mathbf{Z} = 0$ ,  $\text{char } \mathbf{Q} = 0$ ,  $\text{char } \mathbf{R} = 0$ . Here  $\mathbf{Z}$ ,  $\mathbf{Q}$  and  $\mathbf{R}$  are the rings of integers, rationals and reals, respectively.
2.  $\text{char } \mathbf{Z}_2 = 2$ , where  $\mathbf{Z}_2 = \{0, 1\}$ . Notice that 2 is the smallest positive integer such that  $2 \otimes_2 0 = 0$  and  $2 \otimes_2 1 = 0$ .
3.  $\text{char } \mathbf{Z}_3 = 3$ , where  $\mathbf{Z}_3 = \{0, 1, 2\}$ .

In general,  $\text{char } \mathbf{Z}_n = n$ , where  $\mathbf{Z}_n = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1\}$  is the ring of integers modulo  $n$ .

**Theorem 1.8.1.** Prove that the characteristic of any integral domain  $R$  is either zero or a prime number. [D.U., 1996]

**Proof.** If  $\text{char } R = 0$ , then there is nothing to prove.

Let  $\text{char } R = n \neq 0$ , then  $n$  is the least positive integer such that  $na = 0$  for all  $a \in R$ . We shall prove that  $n$  is prime. If  $n$  is not prime, then

$n = lm$ , for some integers  $l$  and  $m$ ;  $1 < l, m < n$ .

$$\text{Now } na = 0 \Rightarrow (lm)a = 0 \Rightarrow (lm)ab = 0b = 0, b \in R$$

$$\Rightarrow ab + ab + \dots + ab = 0 \quad \forall a, b \in R \\ \text{(lm times)}$$

$$\Rightarrow (a + a + \dots + a)(b + b + \dots + b) = 0 \quad \forall a, b \in R \\ \text{l times} \quad \text{m times}$$

$$\Rightarrow (la)(mb) = 0 \quad \forall a, b \in R. \quad \dots(1)$$

Since  $R$  is an integral domain, it follows from (1) that

$$la = 0 \quad \forall a \in R \quad \text{or} \quad mb = 0 \quad \forall b \in R,$$

where  $1 < l < n, 1 < m < n$ .

The above two statements contradict the fact that  $n$  is the least positive integer such that  $na = 0 \quad \forall a \in R$ . Hence  $n$  must be a prime number.

**Corollary.** The characteristic of a field is either zero or a prime number.

**Proof.** Every field is an integral domain and so the result follows.

**Ex. 1.** Define the characteristic of an integral domain. Prove that the characteristic of an integral domain, if finite, must be a prime number. What is the characteristic of  $J_p$ , the ring of integers modulo a prime number  $p$ ? Justify your answer. [D.U., 1999]

**Hint.** Let  $\text{char } R = m$  (finite). Then there exists a smallest positive integer  $n$  such that  $na = 0 \forall a \in R$ . Now proceed like Theorem 1.8.1.

Since  $p$  is prime,  $J_p$  is an integral domain. Hence  $\text{char } J_p = p$ , since  $p$  is the smallest prime number such that  $pa = 0 \forall a \in J_p$ .

**Ex. 2.** Define the characteristic of a ring. What is the characteristic of  $J_n$ , the ring of integers modulo,  $n$  being any positive integer?

[D.U., 1996]

**Hint.**  $J_n = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1\}$ ,  $\text{char } J_n = n$ .

**Ex. 3.** Define characteristic of a ring  $R$ . What does it have to do with  $(R, +)$ , the additive structure of  $R$ ?

[D.U., 1998]

**Hint.** If  $\text{char } R = n$ , then  $n$  is the least positive integer such that  $na = 0 \forall a \in R \Rightarrow o(a) = n \forall a \in (R, +)$ . Hence  $o(a) = \text{char } R$ , for all  $a \neq 0 \in (R, +)$ .

**Theorem 1.8.2.** Prove that order of a finite field  $F$  is  $p^n$ , for some prime  $p$  and some positive integer  $n$ .

**Proof.** Firstly, we show that  $\text{char } F \neq 0$ . Let, if possible,  $\text{char } F = 0$ . By definition,

$$na \neq 0 \quad \forall a \neq 0 \in F \quad \text{and} \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}. \quad \dots(1)$$

It follows that  $a, 2a, 3a, \dots$  belong to  $F$ .

Since  $F$  is finite, we must have

$$\begin{aligned} & ia = ja \text{ for some positive integers } i \text{ and } j, i > j \\ \Rightarrow & (i-j)a = 0, \text{ where } i-j > 0. \end{aligned}$$

This contradicts (1) and so  $\text{char } F \neq 0$ .

We know that the characteristic of a field is either zero or a prime number. Since  $\text{char } F \neq 0$ , so  $\text{char } F = p$ ,  $p$  being some prime number.

Thus  $p$  is the smallest positive integer such that  $pa = 0 \forall a \in F$

$\Rightarrow o(a) = p$ , treating  $(F, +)$  as a group.

Since  $(F, +)$  is a finite group and  $a \in F$ , by Lagrange's theorem,  $o(a)$  divides  $o(F)$ ,

$\Rightarrow p$  divides  $o(F)$ , where  $p$  is prime.

Hence  $o(F) = p^n$ , for some positive integer  $n$ .

**Corollary.** If  $R$  is a finite (non-zero) integral domain, then

$\text{char } R = p^n$ , where  $p$  is a prime number and  $n$  is a positive integer.

**Proof.** The result follows, since every finite integral domain is a field.

### EXAMPLES

**Example 1.8.1.** Let  $R$  be a non-zero ring such that  $x^2 = x$  for all  $x \in R$ . Prove that  $R$  is a commutative ring of characteristic 2.

**Solution.** Refer to Example 1.3.8. Since  $x^2 = x \forall x \in R$ ,  $R$  is commutative and further  $2x = 0 \forall x \in R$ .

Hence  $\text{char } R = 2$ .

[See equation (2) of Example 1.3.8]

**Example 1.8.2.** Let  $R$  be a commutative ring of characteristic 2. Prove that :  $(a+b)^2 = a^2 + b^2 = (a-b)^2 \forall a, b \in R$ .

**Solution.** Since  $R$  is commutative,  $(a \pm b)^2 = a^2 \pm 2ab + b^2$ .

$$\text{Hence } (a \pm b)^2 = a^2 \pm 0 \cdot b + b^2 = a^2 + b^2,$$

$$\text{since } \text{char } R = 2 \Rightarrow 2a = 0 \forall a \in R.$$

**Example 1.8.3.** If  $F$  is a field of characteristic  $p$ ,  $p$  a prime ; then

$$(a+b)^p = a^p + b^p \quad \forall a, b \in F.$$

**Solution.** Since  $\text{char } F = p$ ,  $px = 0 \forall x \in F$ . ... (1)

Since  $F$  is a field, we can write

$$\begin{aligned} (a+b)^p &= a^p + pa^{p-1}b + \frac{1}{2!}p(p-1)a^{p-2}b^2 + \dots + pab^{p-1} + b^p \\ &= a^p + (pb)a^{p-1} + \frac{1}{2!}(p-1)a^{p-2} \cdot b(pb) + \dots + (pa)b^{p-1} + b^p \\ &= a^p + b^p, \text{ using (1).} \end{aligned}$$

**Example 1.8.4.** Let  $R$  be a ring with characteristic  $n$ . Suppose  $ma = 0$  for all  $a \in R$  and for some positive integer  $m$ . Show that  $n$  divides  $m$ . Determine characteristic of  $\mathbf{Z}_n$ . [D.U., 2000]

**Solution.** Since  $\text{char } R = n$ ,  $n$  is the least positive integer such that  $na = 0 \forall a \in R$ . It is given that  $ma = 0 \forall a \in R$  and for some positive integer  $m$ . By division algorithm, there exist integers  $q$  and  $r$  such that  $m = nq + r$ , where  $r = 0$  or  $0 < r < n$ . Consider the case  $0 < r < n$ .

We have  $0 = ma = (nq+r)a = q(na) + ra = 0 + ra = ra$ .

$\therefore ra = 0, \forall a \in R$ ; where  $r$  is a positive integer  $< n$ .

This is a contradiction to the fact that  $\text{char } R = n$ . Consequently,

$$r = 0 \text{ and so } m = nq \Rightarrow n \text{ divides } m.$$

(ii) We know  $\mathbf{Z}_n = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1\}$ . Clearly,  $n$  is the least positive integer such that  $na = 0$  in  $\mathbf{Z}_n$ ,  $\forall a \in \mathbf{Z}_n$ . Hence  $\text{char } \mathbf{Z}_n = n$ .

**Example 1.8.5.** (i) If  $D$  is an integral domain and if  $na = 0$  for some  $a \neq 0$  in  $D$  and some integer  $n \neq 0$ , prove that  $D$  is of finite characteristic. [D.U., 1998, 95]

(ii) What is the relation between the characteristic of  $D$  and the number  $n$ ? [D.U., 1995]

**Solution.** We are given that  $na = 0$  for some  $a \neq 0 \in D$

$$\Rightarrow (na)x = 0x = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$$\Rightarrow (a+a+\dots+a)x = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$n$  times

$$\Rightarrow ax + ax + \dots + ax = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$n$  times

$$\Rightarrow a(x+x+\dots+x) = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$$\Rightarrow a(nx) = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$\Rightarrow a = 0$  or  $nx = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$ , since  $D$  is an integral domain.  
 $\Rightarrow nx = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$ , since  $a \neq 0$ .

Hence the characteristic of  $D$  is finite.

(ii) If  $\text{char } D = m$ , then  $m$  is the smallest positive integer such that  $mx = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$ . It follows that  $m$  divides  $n$  [see Example 1.8.4]. Hence  $x \in R$ ,  $\text{char } D$  divides  $n$ .

**Example 1.8.6.** Prove that a finite integral domain has finite characteristic. Give an example of an integral domain which has an infinite number of elements, yet is of finite characteristic. [D.U., 1995]

**Solution.** Let  $D$  be a finite integral domain. Let  $\text{char } D = 0$ . Then  $na \neq 0 \quad \forall a \neq 0 \in D$  and  $\forall n \in \mathbb{N}$ . *be a prove*

It follows that  $a, 2a, 3a, \dots$  all belong to  $D$ .

Since  $D$  is finite, we must have  $ia = ja$  for some positive integer  $i$  and  $j$ ,  $i > j$ . Then  $(i-j)a = 0$ , where  $i-j > 0$ . *multi*

This contradicts (1) and so  $\text{char } D \neq 0$ .

We know that the characteristic of any integral domain is either zero or a prime number. Since  $\text{char } D \neq 0$ , therefore

$\text{char } D = p$  (finite),  $p$  is some prime.

(ii) Let  $F = \mathbb{Z}_p = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, p-1\}$  be the ring of integers modulo  $p$ . Then  $F$  is an integral domain of characteristic  $p$  i.e.,  $pa = 0 \quad \forall a \in \mathbb{Z}_p$ . *1.9 of*

Let  $F[x]$  be the ring of polynomials over  $F$ . Since  $F$  is an integral domain, so  $F[x]$  is an integral domain having infinite number of elements with finite characteristic  $p$ .

Notice that if  $f(x) = a_0 + a_1 x + \dots + a_r x^r \in F[x]$ , then by (2),

$$pf(x) = pa_0 + pa_1 x + \dots + pa_r x^r = 0 \quad \forall f(x) \in F[x]. \quad \text{of}$$

**Example 1.8.7.** Give an example of an infinite ring having finite characteristic.

**Hint.** Refer to Example 1.8.6.

**Example 1.8.8.** Show that each non-zero element of an integral domain  $D$ , regarded as a member of the additive group of  $D$ , is of the same order.

**Solution.** Let  $a$  be any non-zero element of the additive group  $(D, +)$  and let the order of  $a$  be  $n$ . Then  $n$  is the least positive integer such that  $na = 0$ .

$$\Rightarrow (na)x = 0x = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$$\Rightarrow (a + a + \dots + a)x = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$n$  times

$$\Rightarrow ax + ax + \dots + ax = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$n$  times

$$\Rightarrow a(x + x + \dots + x) = 0 \quad \forall x \in D$$

$n$  times

$$\Rightarrow a(nx) = 0 \quad \forall x \in D.$$

$$\Rightarrow nx = 0 \quad \forall x \in D, \text{ since } a \neq 0 \in D$$

$$\text{Hence } o(x) = n \quad \forall x \neq 0 \in D.$$

**Example 1.8.9.** Let  $R$  be a non-zero ring such that  $x^3 = x$  for all  $x \in R$ . Prove that  $R$  is a commutative ring of characteristic 6.

**Solution.** Refer to Example 1.6.9,  $R$  is a commutative ring such that  $6x = 0 \forall x \in R$ . Hence  $\text{char } R = 6$ .

**Example 1.8.10.** Prove that if  $F$  is a finite field, its characteristic must be a prime number  $p$  and  $F$  contains  $p^n$  elements for some integer  $n$ . Further prove that if  $a \in F$ , then  $a^{p^n} = a$ .

**Solution.** We know  $|F| = p^n$  [See Theorem 1.8.2].

Since non-zero elements of  $F$  (which are  $p^n - 1$  in number) form a multiplicative group, by Lagrange's theorem,

$$a \in F \Rightarrow a^{p^n-1} = e \text{ (multiplicative identity of } F)$$

$$\text{Hence } a \cdot a^{p^n-1} = a \cdot e \text{ or } a^{p^n} = a, a \in F.$$

## 1.9 Ideals in a Ring

**Definition 1.** A non-empty subset  $S$  of a ring  $R$  is called a **left ideal** of  $R$ , if

- (i)  $(S, +)$  is a subgroup of  $(R, +)$   
i.e.,  $a \in S$  and  $b \in S \Rightarrow a - b \in S$ .
- (ii)  $a \in S$  and  $r \in R \Rightarrow ra \in S$ .

**Definition 2.** A non-empty subset  $S$  of a ring  $R$  is called a **right ideal** of  $R$ , if

- (i)  $(S, +)$  is a subgroup of  $(R, +)$   
i.e.,  $a \in S$  and  $b \in S \Rightarrow a - b \in S$ .
- (ii)  $a \in S$  and  $r \in R \Rightarrow ar \in S$ .

**Definition 3.** A non-empty subset  $S$  of a ring  $R$  is called an **ideal** or a **two-sided ideal** of  $R$ , if

- (i)  $(S, +)$  is a subgroup of  $(R, +)$   
i.e.,  $a \in S$  and  $b \in S \Rightarrow a - b \in S$ .
- (ii)  $a \in S$  and  $r \in R \Rightarrow ar \in S$  and  $ra \in S$ .

In other words, a non-empty subset  $S$  of a ring  $R$  is an ideal of  $R$ , if  $S$  is both a left and right ideal of  $R$ .

**Remark 1.** In a commutative ring, every left ideal or right ideal is a two-sided ideal.

2. Since each ideal  $S$  of a ring  $R$  is a subgroup of the additive group  $(R, +)$ ,  $0 \in S$ .

**Example 1.9.1.** If  $\mathbb{Z}$  be the ring of integers and  $n$  be any integer, then  $(n) = \{nx : x \in \mathbb{Z}\}$  is an ideal of  $\mathbb{Z}$ .

**Solution.** Let  $a, b \in (n)$ , so that  $a = nx$  and  $b = ny$ , for some integers  $x$  and  $y$ . Then  $a - b = nx - ny = n(x - y)$ , where  $x - y \in \mathbb{Z}$ . Thus  $a - b \in (n)$ . Again for any integer  $r$ , we see that

$ra = r(nx) = (rn)x = (nr)x = n(rx)$ , where  $rx$  is an integer.

$\therefore ra \in (n)$ . Now  $ar = ra \in (n)$ .

Hence  $(n)$  is an ideal of  $\mathbf{Z}$ .

**Note.**  $(2) = \{\dots, -4, -2, 0, 2, 4, \dots\}$ ,

$(3) = \{\dots, -6, -3, 0, 3, 6, \dots\}$  etc. are ideals in  $\mathbf{Z}$ .

**Theorem 1.9.1.** Every ideal of a ring  $R$  is a subring of  $R$ , but the converse need not be true.

**Proof.** (i) Let  $S$  be an ideal of the given ring  $R$ .

Let  $a, b \in S$ . By definition of an ideal,  $a - b \in S$ .

Further  $a \in S$  and  $b \in S \subseteq R$  (i.e.,  $b \in R$ )  $\Rightarrow ab \in S$ .

Hence  $S$  is a subring of  $R$  (Theorem 1.6.1).

(ii) The converse of part (i) is not true. The set  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers is a subring of the ring  $\mathbf{Q}$  of rational numbers. However,  $\mathbf{Z}$  is not an ideal of  $\mathbf{Q}$ , since  $3 \in \mathbf{Z}$ ,  $\frac{1}{4} \in \mathbf{Q}$ , but  $3 \cdot \frac{1}{4} = \frac{3}{4} \notin \mathbf{Z}$ .

**Theorem 1.9.2.** The intersection of two ideals of a ring  $R$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Proof.** Let  $A$  and  $B$  be any two ideals of  $R$ .

We have to show that  $A \cap B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

We know that  $0 \in A$  and  $0 \in B$  and so  $0 \in A \cap B$ .

Thus  $A \cap B$  is non-empty.

Let  $x, y \in A \cap B$ . Then  $x, y \in A$  and  $x, y \in B$ .

Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ ,  $x - y \in A$ .

Similarly,  $x - y \in B$  and so  $x - y \in A \cap B$ .

Let  $r \in R$ . Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ ,  $rx \in A$  and  $xr \in A$ .

Similarly,  $rx \in B$  and  $xr \in B$ .

So  $rx \in A \cap B$  and  $xr \in A \cap B \forall r \in R$  and  $\forall x \in A \cap B$ .

Hence  $A \cap B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Remark.** The union of two ideals of a ring  $R$  need not be an ideal of  $R$ .

We know

$$A = (2) = \{\dots, -4, -2, 0, 2, 4, \dots\}$$

and

$$B = (3) = \{\dots, -6, -3, 0, 3, 6, \dots\}$$

are two ideals in the ring  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers.

$$\text{Now } A \cup B = \{\dots, -6, -4, -3, -2, 0, 2, 3, 4, 6, \dots\}$$

It is easy to see that  $3 \in A \cup B$  and  $2 \in A \cup B$ , but

$$3 - 2 = 1 \notin A \cup B. \text{ Hence } A \cup B \text{ is not an ideal of } \mathbf{Z}.$$

**Theorem 1.9.3.** The sum of two ideals of a ring  $R$  is an ideal of  $R$

Or

If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then  $A + B = \{a + b : a \in A, b \in B\}$  an ideal of  $R$ .

## RINGS

**Proof.** Since  $0 \in A$  and  $0 \in B$ ,  $0 = 0 + 0 \in A + B$ .

Thus  $A + B$  is non-empty.

Let  $x, y \in A + B$ . Then  $x = a_1 + b_1, y = a_2 + b_2$ ,

for some  $a_1, a_2 \in A$  and  $b_1, b_2 \in B$ . Now

$$x - y = (a_1 + b_1) - (a_2 + b_2) = (a_1 - a_2) + (b_1 - b_2). \quad \dots(1)$$

Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ ,  $a_1 \in A$  and  $a_2 \in A \Rightarrow a_1 - a_2 \in A$ .

Similarly,  $b_1 - b_2 \in B$ . From (1), it follows that  $x - y \in A + B$ .

Let  $r \in R$ . Then  $rx = r(a_1 + b_1) = ra_1 + rb_1$ .  $\dots(2)$

Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ , so  $a_1 \in A$  and  $r \in R \Rightarrow ra_1 \in A$ .

Similarly,  $rb_1 \in B$ . From (2), it follows that  $rx \in A + B \forall r \in R$  and  $\forall x \in A + B$ . Similarly,  $xr \in A + B$ .

Hence  $A + B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

#### Theorem 1.9.4. (Product of Two ideals)

If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then their product  $AB$  defined as

$$AB = \left\{ a_1b_1 + a_2b_2 + \dots + a_nb_n : a_i \in A, b_i \in B, 1 \leq i \leq n \text{ and } n \text{ being a positive integer} \right\}$$

[D.U., 1994]

is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Proof.** Since  $A$  and  $B$  are ideals of  $R$ ,  $0 \in A$  and  $0 \in B$  and so  $0 = 0 \cdot 0 \in AB$ . Thus  $AB$  is non-empty.

Let  $x$  and  $y$  be any two elements of  $AB$ . Then

$$x = a_1b_1 + \dots + a_nb_n \text{ and } y = \alpha_1\beta_1 + \dots + \alpha_m\beta_m;$$

where  $a_i \in A, \alpha_j \in A, b_i \in B, \beta_j \in B ; 1 \leq i \leq n, 1 \leq j \leq m$ .

$$\text{Now } x - y = (a_1b_1 + \dots + a_nb_n) - (\alpha_1\beta_1 + \dots + \alpha_m\beta_m)$$

$$= a_1b_1 + \dots + a_nb_n - \alpha_1\beta_1 - \dots - \alpha_m\beta_m$$

$$= a_1b_1 + \dots + a_nb_n + (-\alpha_1)\beta_1 + \dots + (-\alpha_m)\beta_m,$$

where  $-\alpha_j \in A$  for each  $j$ , since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

It follows that  $x - y \in AB$ . For any  $r \in R$  and  $x \in AB$ , we have

$$rx = r(a_1b_1 + \dots + a_nb_n) = r(a_1b_1) + \dots + r(a_nb_n)$$

$$= (ra_1)b_1 + \dots + (ra_n)b_n, \text{ where } ra_i \in A \text{ for each } i.$$

(Notice that  $r \in R$  and  $a_i \in A \Rightarrow ra_i \in A$ , as  $A$  is a left ideal of  $R$ )

Consequently,  $rx \in AB$ .

$$\text{Again, } xr = (a_1b_1 + \dots + a_nb_n)r = (a_1b_1)r + \dots + (a_nb_n)r$$

$$= a_1(b_1r) + \dots + a_n(b_nr), \text{ where } b_ir \in B \text{ for each } i.$$

(Notice that  $r \in R$  and  $b_i \in B \Rightarrow b_ir \in B$ , as  $B$  is a right ideal of  $R$ ).

Consequently,  $xr \in AB$ . Hence  $AB$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Remark.** On carefully examining the above proof, we observe that  $rx \in AB \forall r \in R, x \in AB$ ; if  $A$  is a left ideal of  $R$  and  $xr \in AB \forall r \in R$ ,  $x \in AB$ , if  $B$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .

Hence Theorem 1.9.4 can be restated as :

If  $A$  is a left ideal and  $B$  is a right ideal of a ring  $R$ , then  $AB$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ .

**Corollary 1.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then

$$AB \subseteq A \cap B.$$

**Proof.** We know that  $AB$  and  $A \cap B$  are ideals of  $R$ .

Let  $x$  be any element of  $AB$ . Then  $x = a_1 b_1 + \dots + a_n b_n$ , for some  $a_i \in A, b_i \in B ; 1 \leq i \leq n$ .

Now  $a_i \in A, b_i \in R \Rightarrow a_i b_i \in A$ , as  $A$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .

$\Rightarrow a_1 b_1 + \dots + a_n b_n \in A \Rightarrow x \in A$ , as  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Again  $a_i \in R, b_i \in B \Rightarrow a_i b_i \in B$ , as  $B$  is a left ideal of  $R$ .

$\Rightarrow a_1 b_1 + \dots + a_n b_n \in B \Rightarrow x \in B$ , as  $B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Hence  $x \in A \cap B$  and so  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ .

**Corollary 2.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then

[D.U., 1994]

$$AB \subseteq A + B.$$

**Proof.** We know that  $A + B$  and  $AB$  are ideals of  $R$ .

Let  $x$  be any element of  $AB$ . Then  $x = a_1 b_1 + a_2 b_2 + \dots + a_n b_n$ , for some  $a_i \in A, b_i \in B ; 1 \leq i \leq n$ .

Now  $a_1 \in A, b_1 \in R, \Rightarrow a_1 b_1 \in A$ , as  $A$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .

Again  $a_i \in R, b_i \in B \Rightarrow a_i b_i \in B$ , as  $B$  is a left ideal of  $R, 2 \leq i \leq n$ .

$\Rightarrow a_2 b_2 + \dots + a_n b_n \in B$ , as  $B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

$\therefore a_1 b_1 + (a_2 b_2 + \dots + a_n b_n) \in A + B \Rightarrow x \in A + B \quad \forall x \in AB$ .

Hence  $AB \subseteq A + B$ .

**Ex.** Let  $U$  and  $V$  be two ideals of a ring  $R$ . Define  $U + V$  and  $UV$ .

Prove that  $U + V$  as well as  $UV$  are ideals of  $R$ . Show that  $UV \subseteq U + V$ .

[D.U., 1994]

## EXAMPLES

**Example 1.9.2.** Show that the set

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \text{ are integers} \right\}$$

is a left ideal in the ring  $M_2$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers. Further show that  $S$  is not a right ideal in  $M_2$ .

**Solution.** Clearly  $S$  is non-empty, since  $\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S$ .

Let  $X, Y \in S$ ; so that  $X = \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix}, Y = \begin{pmatrix} c & 0 \\ d & 0 \end{pmatrix}; a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{Z}$ .

Then  $X - Y = \begin{pmatrix} a - c & 0 \\ b - d & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S$ .

## RINGS

Let  $A \in M_2$ , so that  $A = \begin{pmatrix} p & q \\ r & s \end{pmatrix}$ ,  $p, q, r, s \in \mathbf{Z}$ .

$$\text{Then } AX = \begin{pmatrix} p & q \\ r & s \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} pa + qb & 0 \\ ra + sb & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S.$$

Hence  $S$  is a left ideal of  $M_2$ .

Also  $S$  is not a right ideal of  $M_2$ , since

$$P = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S \text{ and } T = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in M_2,$$

$$\text{but } PT = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \notin S.$$

**Example 1.9.3.** Show that the set

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \text{ are integers} \right\}$$

is a right ideal of  $M_2$ , the ring of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over integers, which is not a left ideal of  $M_2$ .

**Solution.** Let  $X, Y \in S$ , so that

$$X = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, Y = \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \Rightarrow X - Y = \begin{pmatrix} a - c & b - d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S.$$

(Here  $a, b, c, d$  are some integers)

For any  $A = \begin{pmatrix} p & q \\ r & s \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$ , we see that

$$XA = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} p & q \\ r & s \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ap + br & aq + bs \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S.$$

Hence  $S$  is a right ideal of  $M_2$

Consider  $P = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in S$  and  $T = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$ .

$$\text{Then } TP = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \notin S.$$

This shows that  $S$  is not a left ideal of  $M_2$ .

**Example 1.9.4.** If  $S$  be an ideal of a ring  $R$  and  $1 \in S$ , prove that [D.U., 1997]

$S = R$ .

**Solution.** We have  $1 \in S$ . For any  $r \in R$ ;  $1r \in S$ , as  $S$  is an ideal of  $R$ . Thus  $r \in S \forall r \in R$  and so  $R \subseteq S$ . Obviously,  $S \subseteq R$ . Hence  $S = R$ .

**Example 1.9.5.** If  $F$  is a field, prove its only ideals are  $(0)$  and  $F$  itself. [D.U., 1997]

**Solution.** Let  $U$  be any ideal of  $F$ .

If  $U = (0)$ , there is nothing to prove.

Let  $U \neq (0)$ . We shall show that  $U = F$ .

Since  $U \neq (0)$ , so there exists some  $u \neq 0 \in U \subseteq F$ .

Since  $F$  is a field and  $u \neq 0 \in F$ ,  $u^{-1} \in F$  and  $uu^{-1} = u^{-1}u = 1$ .

Since  $U$  is an ideal of  $F$ ,  $u \in U$  and  $u^{-1} \in F \Rightarrow uu^{-1} = 1 \in U$ .

For any  $x \in F$  and  $1 \in U$ ,  $1x = x \in U$ , since  $U$  is an ideal of  $F$ .

Thus  $x \in U \forall x \in F \Rightarrow F \subseteq U$ . Obviously,  $U \subseteq F$ .

Hence  $U = F$ .

**Example 1.9.6.** (a) Let  $R$  be a ring with unity. Prove that no proper ideal of  $R$  can contain an invertible element of  $R$ . [D.U., 1999, 96]

(b) Deduce that a field  $F$  has no proper ideals. [D.U., 1996]

**Solution.** (a) Let  $A$  be any proper ideal of  $R$  containing an invertible element  $a$  i.e.,  $a \in A$ , where  $aa^{-1} = a^{-1}a = 1$ .

Since  $a^{-1} \in R$  and  $a \in A$ ,  $1 = a^{-1}a \in A$ . ( $\because A$  is an ideal of  $R$ )  
For any  $r \in R$  and  $1 \in A$ ,  $1 \cdot r = r \in A$  ( $\because A$  is an ideal of  $R$ )  
 $\therefore r \in A \quad \forall r \in R$  i.e.,  $R \subseteq A$ . Obviously,  $A \subseteq R$ .

Hence  $A = R$  i.e.,  $A$  is not a proper ideal of  $R$ , which is a contradiction.  
Hence the result.

(b) Let  $A$  be any ideal of  $F$ . If  $A = (0)$ , there is nothing to prove. Let  $A \neq (0)$ . Then there exists some element  $a \neq 0 \in A$  i.e.,  $a \neq 0 \in F$ . Since  $F$  is a field,  $a$  is invertible and  $a \in A$ . By part (a),  $A = F$ . Hence  $F$  has no proper ideals.

**Example 1.9.7.** Let  $R$  be a ring and  $a \in R$ . Show that the set  $S = \{r \in R : ra = 0\}$  is a left ideal of  $R$ .

**Solution.** Since  $0a = 0$ ,  $0 \in S$ . Thus  $S$  is non-empty.

Let  $x, y \in S$ , so that  $xa = 0$  and  $ya = 0$ .

Now  $(x - y)a = xa - ya = 0$ . So  $x - y \in S$ .

For any  $r \in R$  and  $x \in S$ ,  $(rx)a = r(xa) = r0 = 0$ . So  $rx \in S$ .

Hence  $S$  is a left ideal of  $R$ .

**Example 1.9.8.** Let  $R$  be the ring of all real valued, continuous functions on  $[0, 1]$ . Show that the set  $S = \{f \in R : f(\frac{1}{2}) = 0\}$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Solution.** Let  $f, g \in S$ . Then  $f(\frac{1}{2}) = 0$  and  $g(\frac{1}{2}) = 0$ .

Consider  $(f-g)(\frac{1}{2}) = f(\frac{1}{2}) - g(\frac{1}{2}) = 0 - 0 = 0$ , using (1). ... (1)

$\therefore (f-g)(\frac{1}{2}) = 0 \Rightarrow f-g \in S$ .

Let  $f \in S$  and  $h \in R$ . Then

$$(fh)(\frac{1}{2}) = f(\frac{1}{2})h(\frac{1}{2}) = 0 \cdot h(\frac{1}{2}) = 0,$$

$$(hf)(\frac{1}{2}) = h(\frac{1}{2})f(\frac{1}{2}) = h(\frac{1}{2}) \cdot 0 = 0.$$

and

Thus  $fh, hf \in S \forall f \in S$  and  $h \in R$ . Hence  $S$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Example 1.9.9.** If  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ , then prove that

$$r(U) = \{x \in R : xu = 0 \forall u \in U\} \text{ is an ideal of } R.$$

**Solution.** Since  $0u = 0 \forall u \in U$ , so  $0 \in r(U)$  and thus  $r(U)$  is non-empty. Let  $x, y \in r(U)$ , so that  $xu = 0$  and  $yu = 0 \forall u \in U$ . ... (1)

We have  $(x - y)u = xu - yu = 0 \forall u \in U$ , by (1).

Thus  $x - y \in r(U)$ .

Let  $a \in R$  and  $x \in r(U)$ , so that  $xu = 0 \forall u \in U$ . ... (2)

Now  $(ax)u = a(xu) = a0 = 0 \forall u \in U$ , by (2).

$$\therefore (ax)u = 0 \forall u \in U \Rightarrow ax \in r(U).$$

Again  $(xa)u = x(au) = xy$ , where  $y = au$ .

Since  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ , so  $a \in R$  and  $u \in U \Rightarrow au \in U \Rightarrow y \in U$ .

... (3)

From (2) and (3),  $xy = 0 \Rightarrow x(au) = 0 \Rightarrow (xa)u = 0$ .

Thus  $(xa)u = 0 \forall u \in U \Rightarrow xa \in r(U)$ .

Hence  $r(U)$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Note.** It may be observed that in (3), we have actually used the fact that  $U$  is a left ideal of  $R$  only. Thus we have another equivalent statement of Example 1.9.9 as follows :

**Example 1.9.10.** If  $R$  is a ring and  $L$  is a left ideal of  $R$ . Then  $\lambda(L) = \{x \in R : xa = 0 \forall a \in L\}$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ . [D.U., 1995]

**Example 1.9.11.** If  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ , then prove that

$$[R : U] = \{x \in R : rx \in U \text{ for every } r \in R\}$$

is an ideal of  $R$  and that it contains  $U$ .

**Solution.** Since  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ , so  $0 \in U$  i.e.,  $r0 \in U \forall r \in R$

( $\because r0 = 0$ ). Thus  $0 \in [R : U]$  and so  $[R : U]$  is non-empty.

Let  $x, y \in [R : U]$ , so that  $rx \in U$  and  $ry \in U \forall r \in R$ . ... (1)

It follows that  $rx - ry \in U \forall r \in R$ , as  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Now  $r(x - y) = rx - ry \in U \forall r \in R \Rightarrow x - y \in [R : U]$ .

Using (1),  $(ra)x \in U$ , since  $ra \in R$ .

Thus  $r(ax) = (ra)x \in U \forall r \in R \Rightarrow ax \in [R : U]$ .

Since  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ , so  $rx \in U$  and  $a \in R$  implies that

$(rx)a \in U \Rightarrow r(xa) \in U \forall r \in R \Rightarrow xa \in [R : U]$ .

Hence  $[R : U]$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Now we show that  $U \subseteq [R : U]$ .

Let  $x \in U$ . Then  $rx \in U \forall r \in R$ , as  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Now  $rx \in U \forall r \in R$  implies that  $x \in [R : U] \Rightarrow U \subseteq [R : U]$ .

Hence  $[R : U]$  is an ideal of  $R$  containing  $U$ .

**Example 1.9.12.** Prove that  $Z(R)$ , the centre of a ring  $R$ , is only a subring of  $R$  and need not be an ideal of  $R$ . [D.U., 1995]

**Solution.** By definition,  $Z(R) = \{a \in R : xa = ax \forall x \in R\}$ .

By Tammes (A.C.T.M.) & a member of P.

Let  $\alpha$  be the sum of all  $L^2$  functions over the measure

For any  $f = \frac{f_1}{f_2}$  in  $H$ , and  $\lambda = \frac{\lambda_1}{\lambda_2}$  in  $L^2$

$$\alpha(f) = \int_{\Omega} f_1 \left( \frac{\lambda_1}{\lambda_2} \right) f_2 = \int_{\Omega} \lambda_1 f_1 = \int_{\Omega} \lambda_1 f_1 = \int_{\Omega} \lambda_1 f_1 = \int_{\Omega} \lambda_1 f_1$$

Lemma 2.  $\alpha(f) = \frac{f_1}{f_2}$  is in  $H$ .

The product of two functions in  $H$  is also in  $H$ .

For  $f = \frac{f_1}{f_2}$  and  $g = \frac{g_1}{g_2}$  in  $H$

$$\alpha(fg) = \int_{\Omega} f_1 \left( \frac{g_1}{g_2} \right) f_2 = \int_{\Omega} g_1 f_1 = \int_{\Omega} g_1 f_1 = \int_{\Omega} g_1 f_1$$

Lemma 3.  $\alpha(f)$  is in  $H$ .

Example 3. Let  $\alpha$  be the sum of all  $L^2$  functions obtained by a convolution of  $\delta(x)$  &  $\delta(x-y)$ . It is in  $L^2(\mathbb{R})$ . Further you can show that  $\alpha$  is an  $L^2$  function, symmetric in the variable  $x$  &  $y$ .

Lemma 4. The set of all  $L^2$  functions obtained by  $\alpha$  is  $L^2(\mathbb{R}^2, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$

Let  $\phi$  be the function  $\phi(x, y) = \delta(x-y)$ .

Then  $\alpha(\phi)$  is a symmetric function.

$$(\phi - \phi^*)^* = \phi^{**} = (\phi - \phi^*)^* \text{ and } \alpha(\phi - \phi^*)^* = \alpha(\phi - \phi^*)^*$$

$$= \phi^* - \phi = (\phi - \phi^*)^* \text{ and } \alpha(\phi - \phi^*)^* = \alpha(\phi - \phi^*)^*$$

$\alpha(\phi - \phi^*)^* = \alpha(\phi - \phi^*)^*$

$(\phi - \phi^*)^* = \phi^* - \phi$  is symmetric.

$= \phi^* - \phi$ , which is  $\alpha(\phi)$ .

Conclusion.  $\alpha(\phi) = \alpha(\phi^*)$  and  $\alpha(\phi)$  is in  $L^2(\mathbb{R}^2, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$

$\alpha(\phi)$  is in  $L^2(\mathbb{R}^2, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$  since  $\alpha(\phi)$  is in  $L^2(\mathbb{R}^2, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$ .

$$\phi = \phi^* \text{ and } \phi^* = \phi$$

Thus  $\alpha(\phi) = \phi$  and  $\alpha(\phi)$  is in  $L^2(\mathbb{R}^2, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R})$ .

$\Rightarrow \alpha(\phi) = \phi$

Example 5.

44

By Theorem 1.6.3,  $Z(R)$  is a subring of  $R$ .

Let  $M_2$  be the ring of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the integers.

For any  $X = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$  and  $A = \begin{pmatrix} p & 0 \\ 0 & p \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$ , we see that

$$AX = \begin{pmatrix} p & 0 \\ 0 & p \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ap & bp \\ cp & dp \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} p & 0 \\ 0 & p \end{pmatrix} = XA.$$

Hence  $Z(M_2) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} p & 0 \\ 0 & p \end{pmatrix} : p \text{ is an integer} \right\}$ .

We proceed to show that  $Z(M_2)$  is not an ideal of  $M_2$ .

For  $S = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$ ,  $A = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 \end{pmatrix} \in Z(M_2)$ , we have

$$SA = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \notin Z(M_2).$$

Hence  $Z(M_2)$  is not an ideal of  $M_2$ .

**Example 1.9.13.** Let  $N$  be the set of all nilpotent elements in a commutative ring  $R$ . Show that  $N$  is an ideal of  $R$ . Further prove that there are no non-zero nilpotent elements in the quotient ring  $R/N$ .

**Solution.** (i) The set of all nilpotent elements of  $R$  is [D.U., 1999, 97, 96]

$$N = \{a \in R : a^n = 0 \text{ for some positive integer } n\}.$$

Let  $a, b \in N$ . Then  $a^n = 0, b^m = 0$  for some  $n, m \in \mathbb{Z}^+$ .

Since  $R$  is commutative, therefore

$$\begin{aligned} (a - b)^{m+n} &= a^{m+n} - (m+n)_{c_1} a^{m+n-1} \cdot b + (m+n)_{c_2} a^{m+n-2} \cdot b^2 \\ &= a^m \cdot a^n - (m+n)_{c_1} a^{m-1} \cdot a^n + \dots + (-1)^{m+n} b^m \cdot b^n \\ &= 0, \text{ using (1).} \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $a - b \in N$ . Let  $a \in N$  and  $r \in R$ . Then

$$(ra)^n = r^n a^n, \text{ since } R \text{ is commutative}$$

$$= r^n \cdot 0 = 0, \text{ using (1). Thus } ra \in N$$

Similarly,  $(ar)^n = a^n r^n = 0 \Rightarrow ar \in N$ . Hence  $N$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

(ii) Since  $N$  is an ideal of  $R$ , the quotient ring is

$$\frac{R}{N} = \{r + N : r \in R\}.$$

(See Chapter 2)

Let  $r + N \in R/N$  be any nilpotent element in  $R/N$ .

Then  $(r + N)^n = \bar{0}$ , for some positive integer  $n$ .

$$\Rightarrow (r + N)^n = N$$

( $\because \bar{0} \in R/N \Rightarrow \bar{0} = N$ )

RINGS

$\Rightarrow r^n + N = N$ , by the multiplication composition in  $R/N$ .

$$\Rightarrow r^n \in N$$

$\Rightarrow (r^n)^m = 0$ , for some positive integer  $m$

$$\Rightarrow r^{nm} = 0 \Rightarrow r \text{ is nilpotent}$$

$$\Rightarrow r \in N \Rightarrow r + N = N \Rightarrow r + N = \bar{0}.$$

Hence  $\bar{0} = N$  is the only nilpotent element of  $R/N$  i.e.,  $R/N$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.

Ex. Show that  $0 + N$  is the only nilpotent element of  $R/N$ .

[D.U., 1996]

**Hint.**  $\bar{0} = N = 0 + N$ .

**Example 1.9.14.** Let  $A$  and  $B$  be any two ideals of a ring  $R$ . Show that  $A + B$  is an ideal of  $R$  generated by  $A \cup B$ .

[D.U., 1998]

**Definition. (Ideal generated by a set)** Let  $S$  be any subset of a ring  $R$ . An ideal  $A$  of  $R$  is said to be generated by  $S$ , if

$$(i) S \subseteq A$$

(ii) If  $I$  is any ideal of  $R$  such that  $S \subseteq I$ , then  $A \subseteq I$ .

We write the ideal  $A$  as  $A = \langle S \rangle$ . Indeed,  $\langle S \rangle$  is the smallest ideal containing  $S$ .

**Solution.** We have to show that  $A + B = \langle A \cup B \rangle$ .

By Theorem 1.9.3,  $A + B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

For any  $a \in A$ ,  $a = a + 0 \in A + B$ . Thus  $A \subseteq A + B$ .

...(1)

Similarly,  $B \subseteq A + B$ . Consequently,  $A \cup B \subseteq A + B$ .

...(2)

Let  $I$  be any ideal of  $R$  such that  $A \cup B \subseteq I$ .

...(3)

We shall prove that  $A + B \subseteq I$ .

Let  $x \in A + B$  be arbitrary. Then  $x = a + b$ , for  $a \in A$ ,  $b \in B$ .

Since  $A \subseteq A \cup B$  and  $B \subseteq A \cup B$ , so  $a, b \in A \cup B$

( $\because A \cup B \subseteq I$ )

$$\Rightarrow a, b \in I$$

$\Rightarrow a + b \in I$ , as  $I$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

$\Rightarrow x \in I$  and so (3) is proved.

$$\Rightarrow x \in I \text{ and so } A + B = \langle A \cup B \rangle.$$

From (1), (2) and (3);  $A + B = \langle A \cup B \rangle$ .

**Example 1.9.15.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , prove that  $A \cup B$  is an ideal of  $R$  if and only if either  $A \subseteq B$  or  $B \subseteq A$ .

**Solution. Condition is sufficient**

Let  $A \subseteq B$ . Then  $A \cup B = B$ , which is an ideal of  $R$ .

Let  $B \subseteq A$ . Then  $A \cup B = A$ , which is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Condition is necessary**

Let  $A \cup B$  be an ideal of  $R$ . We have to show that either  $A \subseteq B$  or  $B \subseteq A$ . Suppose the conclusion is not true. Then  $A \not\subseteq B$  and  $B \not\subseteq A$ . Consequently, there exists some  $x \in A$  such that  $x \notin B$  and some  $y \in B$  such that  $y \notin A$ .

Now  $x \in A, y \in B \Rightarrow x, y \in A \cup B \Rightarrow x - y \in A \cup B$ ,  
since  $A \cup B$  is an ideal of  $R$ . We have

$$x - y \in A \cup B \Rightarrow x - y \in A \text{ or } x - y \in B.$$

If  $x - y \in A$ , then  $x \in A \Rightarrow x - (x - y) \in A$ , as  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

$\therefore y \in A$ , which is a contradiction.

If  $x - y \in B$ , then  $x = (x - y) + y \in B$ , which is again a contradiction.  
Hence either  $A \subseteq B$  or  $B \subseteq A$ .

**Example 1.9.16.** Let  $A$  and  $B$  be two ideals of a commutative ring  $R$  with unity such that  $A + B = R$ . Show that  $AB = A \cap B$ .

**Solution.** Since  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of  $R$ ,  $AB$  is an ideal of  $R$  and  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ . [See Theorem 1.9.4 and Cor. 1]

Conversely, let  $x \in A \cap B$  be arbitrary. Since  $R = A + B$  and  $1 \in R$ , so

$$1 \in A + B \Rightarrow 1 = a + b, \text{ for some } a \in A, b \in B.$$

$$\therefore x = x \cdot 1 = x(a + b) = xa + xb. \quad \dots(1)$$

$$\text{Now } x \in A \text{ and } b \in B \Rightarrow xb \in AB,$$

$$\text{and } x \in B \text{ and } a \in A \Rightarrow ax \in AB \Rightarrow xa \in AB,$$

since  $R$  is commutative.

$\therefore xa + xb \in AB$ , since  $AB$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

By (1),  $x \in AB \forall x \in A \cap B$  and so  $A \cap B \subseteq AB$ .

Hence  $AB = A \cap B$ .

**Remark.** Two ideals  $A$  and  $B$  of a ring  $R$  satisfying  $A + B = R$  are called co-maximal ideals.

**Example 1.9.17.** If  $A, B$  and  $C$  are ideals of a ring  $R$ , prove that  $A(B + C) = AB + AC$ .

**Solution.** By the given hypothesis,  $B + C, AB, AC, A(B + C)$  and  $AB + AC$  are ideals of  $R$ .

For any  $b \in B, b = b + 0 \in B + C$ .

$\therefore B \subseteq B + C$ . Similarly,  $C \subseteq B + C$

$(\because 0 \in C)$

$\Rightarrow AB \subseteq A(B + C)$  and  $AC \subseteq A(B + C)$

$\Rightarrow AB + AC \subseteq A(B + C)$ .

Conversely, let  $x \in A(B + C)$  be arbitrary. Then

$$x = a_1 t_1 + a_2 t_2 + \dots + a_n t_n, \text{ where } a_i \in A, t_i \in B + C.$$

Since  $t_i \in B + C, t_i = b_i + c_i$ , for some  $b_i \in B$  and  $c_i \in C$ .

$\therefore x = a_1(b_1 + c_1) + a_2(b_2 + c_2) + \dots + a_n(b_n + c_n)$

$$= (a_1 b_1 + a_2 b_2 + \dots + a_n b_n) + (a_1 c_1 + a_2 c_2 + \dots + a_n c_n) \in AB + AC$$

$\therefore A(B + C) \subseteq AB + AC$ .

From (1) and (2)  $A(B + C) = AB + AC$ .

$\dots(2)$

**PROOF**

**Example 1.9.18.** If  $A, B, C$  are ideals of a ring  $R$  such that  $B \subseteq A$ , prove that

$$A \cap (B+C) = B + (A \cap C) = (A \cap B) + (A \cap C).$$

**Solution.** By the given hypothesis,  $B \subseteq C$ ,  $A \subseteq C$  and  $A \cap (B+C)$  exists as an ideal of  $R$ .

Let  $x \in A \cap (B+C)$  be arbitrary. Then  $x \in A$  and  $x \in B+C$ .

We have  $x = b_1 + c_1$  for some  $b_1 \in B, c_1 \in C$ .

Again  $b_1 \in A$  as  $A \subseteq B$  and  $A \subseteq C$  ( $\because B \subseteq A$ ).

$\Rightarrow b_1 \in A \cap C$  ( $\because A$  is an ideal of  $R$ ).

$\Rightarrow c_1 \in A \Rightarrow x \in A \cap C$ .

$\therefore x = b_1 + c_1 \Rightarrow x \in B + (A \cap C)$ .

Consequently,  $A \cap (B+C) \subseteq B + (A \cap C)$ .

Conversely, let  $x \in B + (A \cap C)$  be arbitrary. ...(1)

$\Rightarrow x = b_1 + c_1$  for some  $b_1 \in B, c_1 \in A \cap C$ .

$\Rightarrow x \in B+C$ , as  $b_1 \in B$  and  $c_1 \in C$ .

Again  $B \subseteq A \Rightarrow b_1 \in A$ . Also  $c_1 \in A$ .

$\therefore x = b_1 + c_1 \in A$ , as  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Thus  $x \in A$ . Also  $x \in B+C$ .

$\therefore x \in A \cap (B+C)$ .

Consequently,  $B + (A \cap C) \subseteq A \cap (B+C)$ . ...(2)

From (1) and (2), we obtain

$$A \cap (B+C) = B + (A \cap C).$$

Since  $B \subseteq A$ , so  $A \cap B = B$ . Hence

$$A \cap (B+C) = B + (A \cap C) = (A \cap B) + (A \cap C).$$

**Example 1.9.19.** If  $A, B$  be two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ . Give an example to show that there exist ideals  $A$  and  $B$  such that  $AB \not\subseteq A \cap B$ .

**Solution.** By Corollary 1 of Theorem 1.9.4,  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ .

Let  $A = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix}; a, b \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}, B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}; c, d \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}$ .

Then  $A$  is a left ideal of  $M_2$  and  $B$  is a right ideal of  $M_2$  ( $M_2$  being the ring of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the integers). It follows that  $AB$  is an ideal of  $M_2$  [See Theorem 1.9.4].

We have

$$\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ bc & bd \end{pmatrix}.$$

$$\text{Consequently, } AB = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} p & q \\ r & s \end{pmatrix}; p, q, r, s \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}.$$

**Example 1.9.18.** If  $A, B, C$  are ideals of a ring  $R$  such that  $B \subseteq A$ , prove that

$$A \cap (B + C) = B + (A \cap C) = (A \cap B) + (A \cap C).$$

**Solution.** By the given hypothesis,  $B + C, A \cap C$  and  $A \cap (B + C)$ ,  $B + (A \cap C)$  are also ideals of  $R$ .

Let  $x \in A \cap (B + C)$  be arbitrary. Then  $x \in A$  and  $x \in B + C$ .

We have  $x \in B + C \Rightarrow x = b + c$ , for some  $b \in B, c \in C$ .

Thus  $b + c \in A$  ( $\because x \in A$ ) and  $b \in A$  ( $\because B \subseteq A$ )

$$\Rightarrow b + c - b \subseteq A \quad (\because A \text{ is an ideal of } R)$$

$$\Rightarrow c \in A \Rightarrow c \in A \cap C$$

$$\therefore x = b + c \Rightarrow x \in B + (A \cap C).$$

$$\text{Consequently, } A \cap (B + C) \subseteq B + (A \cap C). \quad \dots(1)$$

Conversely, let  $x \in B + (A \cap C)$  be arbitrary.

$$\Rightarrow x = b_1 + c_1, \text{ for some } b_1 \in B, c_1 \in A \cap C$$

$$\Rightarrow x \in B + C, \text{ as } b_1 \in B \text{ and } c_1 \in C.$$

$$\text{Again } B \subseteq A \Rightarrow b_1 \in A. \text{ Also } c_1 \in A.$$

$$\therefore x = b_1 + c_1 \in A, \text{ as } A \text{ is an ideal of } R.$$

$$\text{Thus } x \in A. \text{ Also } x \in B + C.$$

$$\therefore x \in A \cap (B + C). \quad \dots(2)$$

$$\text{Consequently, } B + (A \cap C) \subseteq A \cap (B + C).$$

From (1) and (2), we obtain

$$A \cap (B + C) = B + (A \cap C).$$

Since  $B \subseteq A$ , so  $A \cap B = B$ . Hence

$$A \cap (B + C) = B + (A \cap C) = (A \cap B) + (A \cap C).$$

**Example 1.9.19.** If  $A, B$  be two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ . Give an example to show that there exist ideals  $A$  and  $B$  such that  $AB \neq A \cap B$ .

**Solution.** By Corollary 1 of Theorem 1.9.4,  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ .

$$\text{Let } A = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}, B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : c, d \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}.$$

Then  $A$  is a left ideal of  $M_2$  and  $B$  is a right ideal of  $M_2$  ( $M_2$  being the ring of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the integers). It follows that  $AB$  is an ideal of  $M_2$  [See Theorem 1.9.4].

We have

$$\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ bc & bd \end{pmatrix}.$$

$$\text{Consequently, } AB = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} p & q \\ r & s \end{pmatrix} : p, q, r, s \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}.$$

$$\text{However, } A \cap B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : x \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}.$$

Hence  $AB \neq A \cap B$ .

For example,  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in AB$ , but  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \subseteq A \cap B$ .

**Example 1.9.20.** If  $A$  is a left ideal and  $B$  is a right ideal of a ring  $R$ , then show that  $AB$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ . What can you say about  $BA$ ?

**Solution.** By Theorem 1.9.4,  $AB$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ .

(ii) Refer to the ideals  $A$  and  $B$  of  $M_2$  as given in Example 1.9.19.

We see that

$$\begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ac + bd & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Thus

$$BA = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : x \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}.$$

We take

$$S = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in BA \text{ and } T = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in M_2. \text{ Then}$$

$$ST = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \notin BA \text{ and } TS = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \notin BA.$$

Hence  $BA$  is neither a left ideal nor a right ideal of  $M_2$ .

**Example 1.9.21.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are ideals of a ring  $R$ , define

where

$$A : B = \{r \in R : rB \subseteq A\},$$

$$rB = \{rb : b \in B\}.$$

Show that  $A : B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Solution.** Let  $r_1, r_2 \in A : B$ . Then  $r_1 B \subseteq A$  and  $r_2 B \subseteq A$ .

$$\therefore (r_1 - r_2)B = r_1 B - r_2 B \subseteq A, \text{ since } A \text{ is an ideal of } R.$$

Thus  $r_1 - r_2 \subseteq A : B$ .

Let

$$r_1 \in A : B \text{ and } x \in R. \text{ Then } r_1 B \subseteq A \text{ and}$$

$$(xr_1)B = x(r_1 B) \subseteq xA \subseteq A, \text{ since } A \text{ is an ideal of } R.$$

$$\therefore xr_1 \in A : B.$$

Again,  $(r_1 x)B = r_1(xB) \subseteq r_1 B \subseteq A$ , since  $B$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

$$\therefore r_1 x \in A : B. \text{ Hence } A : B \text{ is an ideal of } R.$$

**Example 1.9.22.** Let  $R$  be a commutative ring and let  $A$  be an ideal of  $R$ . Show that

$\sqrt{A} = \{x \in R : x^n \in A \text{ for some positive integer } n\}$  is an ideal of  $R$  such that

$$(i) A \subseteq \sqrt{A}$$

$$(iii) \text{ If } R \text{ has unity and } \sqrt{\sqrt{A}} = R, \text{ then } A = R.$$

$$(ii) \sqrt{\sqrt{A}} = \sqrt{A}$$

**Solution.** Let  $a, b \in \sqrt{A}$ . Then  $a^m \in A$  and  $b^n \in A$ , for some positive integers  $m$  and  $n$ . Since  $R$  is commutative,

$$\begin{aligned}(a-b)^{m+n} &= a^{m+n} - (m+n)a^{m+n-1}b + \dots + (-1)^{m+n}b^{m+n} \\ &= a^m \cdot a^n - (m+n)a^{m-1} \cdot a^{n-1}b + \dots + (-1)^{m+n}b^m \cdot b^n \in A.\end{aligned}$$

since  $a^m \in A$ ,  $b^n \in A$  and  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Thus  $a-b \in \sqrt{A}$ . For any  $r \in A$ ,  $a \in \sqrt{A}$ ; we have

$$(ra)^m = r^m a^m, \text{ since } R \text{ is commutative.}$$

Again  $r^m a^m \in A$ , since  $a^m \in A$ ,  $r^m \in R$  and  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

$$ra \in \sqrt{A}. \quad \text{Similarly, } ar \in \sqrt{A}.$$

Hence  $\sqrt{A}$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

(i) Obviously,  $A \subseteq \sqrt{A}$  ( $\because x \in A \Rightarrow x^2 \in A$ , as  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ )

(ii) We have  $\sqrt{\sqrt{A}} = \sqrt{S}$ , where  $S = \sqrt{A}$ .

By part (i),  $S \subseteq \sqrt{S} \Rightarrow \sqrt{A} \subseteq \sqrt{\sqrt{A}}$ .

Conversely, let  $x \in \sqrt{\sqrt{A}} \Rightarrow x \in \sqrt{S} \Rightarrow x^n \in S$ , for some  $n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$\Rightarrow x^n \in \sqrt{A} \Rightarrow (x^n)^m \in A, \text{ for some } m \in \mathbb{N}$$

$$\Rightarrow x^{nm} \in A, \text{ where } nm \in \mathbb{N}$$

$$\Rightarrow x \in \sqrt{A} \Rightarrow \sqrt{\sqrt{A}} \subseteq \sqrt{A}.$$

$$\text{Hence } \sqrt{\sqrt{A}} = \sqrt{A}.$$

(iii) Let  $1 \in R$  and  $\sqrt{A} = R$ . Then  $1 \in \sqrt{A} \Rightarrow 1^n \in A$ , for some positive integer  $n \Rightarrow 1 \in A$  and  $A$  is an ideal of  $R \Rightarrow 1 \cdot r \in A \quad \forall r \in R \Rightarrow r \in A \quad \forall r \in R \Rightarrow R \subseteq A$ . Obviously,  $A \subseteq R$ . Hence  $A = R$ .

$\sqrt{A}$  is often called the **radical** of  $A$ . We also write  $\sqrt{A}$  as  $N(A)$ .

**Example 1.9.23.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity. Show that

$$\langle a \rangle = \left\{ \sum_{\text{finite}} xay : x, y \in R \right\}.$$

[D.U., 2000]

**Solution.** Let  $S = \left\{ \sum_{\text{finite}} xay : x, y \in R \right\}$ .

We have to show that  $S$  is the smallest ideal of  $R$ , which contains  $a$ .

First of all, we show that  $S$  is an ideal of  $R$ . Let  $\alpha, \beta \in S$ .

$$\text{Then } \alpha = x_1 ay_1 + \dots + x_n ay_n, \quad \beta = s_1 at_1 + \dots + s_m at_m;$$

$$\text{where } x_i, y_i, s_j, t_j \in R; 1 \leq i \leq n, 1 \leq j \leq m.$$

We observe that

$$\alpha - \beta = x_1 ay_1 + \dots + x_n ay_n + (-s_1) at_1 + \dots + (-s_m) at_m \in S.$$

$$\text{For any } r \in R \text{ and } \alpha \in S, \quad r\alpha = (rx_1) ay_1 + \dots + (rx_n) ay_n \in S$$

$$\text{and } \alpha r = x_1 a(y_1 r) + \dots + x_n a(y_n r) \in S, \text{ as } rx_i \in R \text{ and } y_j r \in R.$$

Hence  $S$  is an ideal of  $R$  containing  $a$ , since  $a = 1 \cdot a \cdot 1 \in S$ .

Let  $T$  be any ideal of  $R$  containing  $a$ . We shall prove that  $S \subseteq T$ . Since  $T$  is an ideal of  $R$  and  $a \in T$ ,  $xa \in T$  and so  $xay \in T$ ,  $\forall x, y \in R$ .

Consequently,  $\sum_{\text{finite}} xay \in T$ , as  $T$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

This shows that  $S \subseteq T$ . Hence  $S$  is the smallest ideal containing  $a$  and so  $S = \langle a \rangle$ .

**Example 1.9.24.** Prove that any non-zero ideal in the Gaussian integers  $J[i]$  must contain some positive integer.

**Solution.** We know  $J[i] = \{m + ni : m, n \text{ are integers}, i = \sqrt{-1}\}$  is an integral domain with unity 1. Further  $J[i]$  is a principal ideal domain.

[See corollary of Theorem 3.1.1. of chapter 3]

It means every non-zero ideal  $A$  of  $J[i]$  is generated by a single element of  $J[i]$  i.e.,

$$A = \langle m + ni \rangle = \{ (m + ni)x : x \in J[i] \}.$$

Here  $m + ni \neq 0 \in A$  i.e.,  $m$  and  $n$  are not both zero.

Since  $m + ni \in A$  and  $m - ni \in J[i]$ , so

$(m + ni)(m - ni) \in A$ , as  $A$  is an ideal of  $J[i]$

$$\Rightarrow m^2 + n^2 \in A, \text{ where } m^2 + n^2 \text{ is a positive integer.}$$

Hence every non-zero ideal in  $J[i]$  must contain some positive integer.

Clearly,

4. If  $A$  and  $B$  are ideals in a ring  $R$  such that  $A$  is a left (right) ideal and  $B$  is a right (left) ideal, prove that  $A \cap B = (0)$ .  
 [Hint. See Theorem 3.1.1.]
5. What can you say about the intersection of two ideals of a ring  $R$ ?  
 [Hint. Refer Example 1.9.24.]

Thus  $A \cap B = (0)$ .

6. If  $A$  and  $B$  are ideals in a ring  $R$  such that  $A \cap B = (0)$ , prove that for every  $a \in A$ ,  $b \in B$ ,  $ab = 0$ .

[Hint.  $a \in A$ ,  $b \in B$  i.e.,  $b \in R \Rightarrow ab \in A$  ( $\because A$  is an ideal of  $R$ )  
 $a \in A$  i.e.,  $a \in B \Rightarrow ab \in B$  ( $\because B$  is an ideal of  $R$ )  
 Hence  $ab \in A \cap B = (0) \Rightarrow ab = 0$ .]

3. Prove that the intersection of two left (right) ideals of a ring  $R$  is a left (right) ideal of  $R$ . What can you say about the intersection of a left ideal and a right ideal of  $R$ ?

[Hint. If  $A$  is a left ideal of  $R$  and  $B$  is a right ideal of  $R$ , then  $A \cap B$  need not be even a one-sided ideal of  $R$ . Let us take

$$A = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbb{Z} \right\} \text{ and } B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : c, d \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}.$$

Then  $A$  is a left ideal and  $B$  is a right ideal of the ring  $M_2$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the integers [See Examples 1.9.2 and 1.9.3].

$$\text{We have } A \cap B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}.$$

Clearly,  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in A \cap B$  and  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$ .

But  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \left( \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right) = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$

Thus  $A \cap B \neq (0)$ .

7. If  $A$  is a left ideal of  $R$  and  $B$  is a right ideal of  $R$ , prove that  $AB$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ .  
 [Hint.  $AB$  is a left ideal of  $R$ .  
 (ii)  $AB$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .  
 We have  $a(bx) = (ab)x \in AB$  for all  $a \in A$ ,  $b \in B$ ,  $x \in R$ .]

The

A

7. If

e

[

But  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \notin A \cap B,$

$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \notin A \cap B]$

4. If  $A$  and  $B$  are two left (right) ideals of a ring  $R$ , then show that  $A + B$  is a left (right) ideal of  $R$ .

[Hint. See Theorem 1.9.3]

5. What can you say about the sum of a left ideal and a right ideal of  $R$ ?

[Hint. Refer to the left ideal  $A$  and right ideal  $B$  of  $M_2$  as given in Ex. 3.

We have

$$A + B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & z \\ y & 0 \end{pmatrix} : x, y, z \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}.$$

Clearly,  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in A + B$  and  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in M_2$ . But

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 2 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \notin A + B \text{ and}$$

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \notin A + B.$$

Thus  $A + B$  need not be even a one-sided ideal of  $M_2$ .]

6. If  $A$  is a left ideal and  $B$  is a right ideal of a ring  $R$ , then show that  $AB$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ , whereas  $BA$  need not be even a one-sided ideal of  $R$ .

[Hint. (i) See the Remark of Theorem 1.9.4 for the proof of the fact that  $AB$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ .

(ii) Take the left ideal  $A$  and the right ideal  $B$  of  $M_2$  as given in Ex. 3.

We see that

$$\begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} cd + ab & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Thus  $BA = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : x \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}.$

As shown in Ex. 3 above,  $BA$  is not even a one-sided ideal of  $M_2$ .]

7. If  $A, B$  be two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then show that  $AB \subseteq A \cap B$ . Give an example to show that there exist ideals  $A$  and  $B$  such that  $AB \neq A \cap B$ .

[Hint. (i) See Corollary 1 of Theorem 1.9.4.

(ii) Let  $A$  be the left ideal of  $M_2$  and  $B$  the right ideal of  $M_2$  as given in

Ex. 3. Then

$$A \cap B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \in \mathbf{Z} \right\} \text{ and } AB = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ z & t \end{pmatrix} : x, y, z, t \in \mathbf{Z} \right\} = M_2,$$

since  $\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ b & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ bc & bd \end{pmatrix}.$

8. If  $A, B$  be two ideal of a ring  $R$ , then show that  $AB \subseteq A + B$ . Give an example to show that there exist ideals  $A$  and  $B$  such that  $AB \neq A + B$ .  
 [Hint. See Cor. 2 of Theorem 1.9.4]
9. Give an example of two ideals  $A$  and  $B$  of  $R$  such that  $A \subseteq B \subseteq R$ , where  $A$  is an ideal of  $B$ ,  $B$  is an ideal of  $R$ , but  $A$  is not an ideal of  $R$ .

[Hint. Let  $R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x_1 & x_2 & x_3 \\ y_1 & y_2 & y_3 \\ 0 & 0 & z \end{pmatrix} : x_i, y_i, z \text{ are integers} \right\}$ ,

$$B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & x \\ 0 & 0 & y \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : x, y \text{ are integers} \right\},$$

$$A = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & x \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : x \text{ is an integer} \right\}.$$

Then  $A$  is an ideal of  $B$ ,  $B$  is an ideal of  $R$ . But  $A$  is not an ideal of  $R$ ,

since  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \notin A$ .

10. Let  $R$  be the ring of all real-valued, continuous functions on  $[0, 1]$ . Show that the set  $S = \{f \in R : f(\frac{2}{3}) = 0\}$  is an ideal of  $R$ .  
 [Hint. Similar to Example 1.9.8.]
11. If  $R$  is a commutative ring and  $a \in R$ , then prove that  $Ra = \{ra : r \in R\}$  is an ideal of  $R$ .  
 [Hint.  $x, y \in Ra \Rightarrow x = r_1 a, y = r_2 a \Rightarrow x - y = (r_1 - r_2) a \in Ra$ , since  $r_1 - r_2 \in R$ . For any  $r \in R$ ,  $rx = r(r_1 a) = (rr_1) a \in Ra$ .  $R$  is commutative  $\Rightarrow xr = rx \in Ra$  i.e.,  $xr \in Ra$ .]
12. For any element  $a$  of a ring  $R$ , prove that  $Ra = \{xa : x \in R\}$  is a left ideal of  $R$ .  
 [Hint. See Ex. 11 above.]
13. Consider the ring  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers and an ideal  $M$  of  $\mathbf{Z}$  consisting of all multiples of a prime  $p$ . Let  $N$  be an ideal of  $\mathbf{Z}$  such that  $M \subset N \subset \mathbf{Z}$ . Show that  $N = M$  or  $N = \mathbf{Z}$ .  
 [Hint. Let  $M = (p) = \{px : x \in \mathbf{Z}\}$ ,  $N = (n) = \{nx : x \in \mathbf{Z}\}$ .  $M \subset N \Rightarrow p \in (n) \Rightarrow p = nx$ , for  $x \in \mathbf{Z}$ . Since  $p$  is prime, either  $n = 1$  or  $n = p \Rightarrow$  either  $(n) = (1)$  or  $(n) = (p) \Rightarrow$  either  $N = \mathbf{Z}$  or  $N = M$ . Also see Example 2.6.6 of Chapter 2.]
14. Let  $R$  be a ring with unity and  $A$  be any proper ideal of  $R$ . Show that no element of  $A$  can have a multiplicative inverse.  
 [Hint. See Example 1.9.6(a)]

## RINGS

15. Show that the set  $S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & b \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbf{Z} \right\}$  is a subring of the ring  $M_2$  of  $2 \times 2$  matrices over the integers. Also prove that  $S$  is neither a left nor a right ideal of  $M_2$ .
16. If  $S$  is an ideal of a ring  $R$  and  $T$  is any subring of  $R$ , then show that  $S$  is an ideal of  $S + T$ .  
 [Hint. First show that  $S + T$  is a subring of  $R$ .]
17. Show that if  $A$  is an ideal of a ring  $R$ , then  $A + A = A$ .  
 [Hint. For any  $a \in A$ ,  $a + 0 \in A + A$  and so  $A \subseteq A + A$ . Conversely, let  $x \in A + A \Rightarrow x = a_1 + a_2$  for some  $a_1, a_2 \in A \Rightarrow x \in A$ , since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R \Rightarrow A + A \subseteq A$ . Hence  $A + A = A$ .]
18. If  $R$  is a ring and  $A$  is a left ideal of  $R$ , prove that

$$\text{Ann}(A) = \{x \in R : xa = 0 \ \forall a \in A\}$$

[D.U., 1996]

is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ .

[Hint. Compare with Example 1.9.10]

19. Consider the ring  $R$  of all  $3 \times 3$  matrices of the form :

$$R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b & c \\ 0 & d & e \\ 0 & 0 & f \end{pmatrix}, a, b, c, d, e, f \text{ are real numbers} \right\}.$$

Show that the set  $I = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \text{ is real} \right\}$

is a left ideal of  $R$ , which is not a right ideal of  $R$ .

20. Let  $A$  be an ideal of a ring  $R$  such that  $A \neq R$ . Show that if  $R$  has unity, then  $1 \notin A$ .  
 [Hint. If  $1 \in A$ , then  $A = R$  [See Example 1.9.4], which is a contradiction.]

### 1.10 Simple Ring

**Definition.** A ring  $R$  is called a simple ring, if

(i) there exist two elements  $a, b$  in  $R$  such that  $ab \neq 0$ .

(ii)  $R$  has no proper ideals i.e., the only ideals of  $R$  are  $\{0\}$  and  $R$ .

### Illustration

The ring  $\mathbf{Z}_2 = \{0, 1\}$  modulo 2 is a simple ring, since  $1 \otimes_2 1 = 1 \neq 0$  and  $\mathbf{Z}_2$  has no proper ideals.

(Notice that  $\mathbf{Z}_2$  is a field and a field has no proper ideals).

**Theorem 1.10.1.** Prove that a division ring is a simple ring.

**Proof.** Let  $R$  be a division ring. Since  $1 \in R$ , so  $1 \cdot 1 = 1 \neq 0$ . Next we show that  $R$  has no proper ideals. Let  $A$  be any ideal of  $R$ . If  $A = \{0\}$ , there is nothing to prove. Let  $A \neq \{0\}$ . Then there exists some  $a \neq 0 \in A \subseteq R$ . So  $a^{-1} \in R$  exists such that  $aa^{-1} = a^{-1}a = 1$ . Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ , so  $a \in A$  and  $a^{-1} \in R \Rightarrow aa^{-1} \in A \Rightarrow 1 \in A \Rightarrow 1 \cdot x \in A \ \forall x \in R$

$\Rightarrow x \in A \forall x \in R \Rightarrow R \subseteq A$ . Obviously,  $A \subseteq R$ .

Hence  $A = R$  and so  $R$  is a simple ring.

**Theorem 1.10.2.** Let  $R$  be a commutative simple ring with unity. Prove [D.U., 1998] that  $R$  is a field.

Or

If  $R$  be a commutative ring with unity whose only ideals are  $\{0\}$  are  $R$ , then show that  $R$  is a field.

**Proof.** We are given that  $R$  is a commutative ring with unity (i.e.,  $1 \in R$ ). Then  $R$  becomes a field if we just prove that each non-zero element of  $R$  has its multiplicative inverse. Let  $a \neq 0 \in R$  be arbitrary.

$$\text{Let } aR = \{ax : x \in R\}.$$

We proceed to show that  $aR$  is an ideal of  $R$ . ..(1)

Since  $0 = a0 \in aR$ ,  $aR$  is non-empty.

Let  $\alpha, \beta \in aR$  be arbitrary. Then by (1), we have

$$\alpha = ax, \beta = ay, \text{ for some } x, y \in R$$

$$\Rightarrow \alpha - \beta = ax - ay = a(x - y) \in aR, \text{ since } x - y \in R.$$

$$\text{For any } r \in R, \alpha \in aR ; \alpha r = (ax)r = a(xr) \in aR, \text{ since } xr \in R.$$

$$\text{Since } R \text{ is commutative, } r\alpha = \alpha r \in aR.$$

Thus  $aR$  is an ideal of  $R$ . Since the only ideals of  $R$  are  $\{0\}$  and  $R$ , it follows that

$$aR = \{0\} \text{ or } aR = R.$$

Since  $1 \in R$ , so  $a \cdot 1 = a \in aR$  and  $a \neq 0$ . Consequently,  $aR \neq \{0\}$ . Hence  $aR = R$ . Since  $1 \in R = aR$ , we have

$$1 = ab \text{ for some } b \in R.$$

$$\Rightarrow 1 = ab = ba, \text{ since } R \text{ is commutative}$$

$$\Rightarrow a^{-1} = b \in R. \text{ Hence } R \text{ is a field.}$$

**Ex.** Prove that a commutative ring  $R$  with unity is a field if and only if it has no proper ideals.

[Hint. See the above theorem and Example 1.9.5 (i.e., a field has no proper ideals)]

### EXAMPLES

**Example 1.10.1.** Show that the set of  $2 \times 2$  matrices of the form

$$S = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{pmatrix} : a \text{ and } b \text{ are complex numbers and } a, b \text{ their conjugates} \right\}$$

is a simple ring.

**Solution.** By Example 1.4.6,  $S$  is a division ring under matrix addition and matrix multiplication. Hence by Theorem 1.10.1,  $S$  is a simple ring.

**Example 1.10.2.** Define a simple ring and give an example of it.  
Please try yourself.

informed with good money  
most of whom did not know it well  
but said it was not in general good  
money to handle

by the time of the 1<sup>st</sup> of July  
but there was no one who would  
not take it at that price and I had  
no place to go where I could not  
get it for less  
so I sold what I had at cost and a 10%  
profit

so I got my 1<sup>st</sup> 1000<sup>s</sup> of 100<sup>s</sup>  
by the 1<sup>st</sup>, so the 1<sup>st</sup> & 2<sup>nd</sup>, 3<sup>rd</sup> & 4<sup>th</sup>,  
4<sup>th</sup> & 5<sup>th</sup>, 5<sup>th</sup> & 6<sup>th</sup>, 6<sup>th</sup> & 7<sup>th</sup>,  
7<sup>th</sup> & 8<sup>th</sup>, 8<sup>th</sup> & 9<sup>th</sup>, 9<sup>th</sup> & 10<sup>th</sup>,  
10<sup>th</sup> & 11<sup>th</sup>, 11<sup>th</sup> & 12<sup>th</sup>,  
12<sup>th</sup> & 13<sup>th</sup>, 13<sup>th</sup> & 14<sup>th</sup>,  
14<sup>th</sup> & 15<sup>th</sup>, 15<sup>th</sup> & 16<sup>th</sup>,  
16<sup>th</sup> & 17<sup>th</sup>, 17<sup>th</sup> & 18<sup>th</sup>,  
18<sup>th</sup> & 19<sup>th</sup>, 19<sup>th</sup> & 20<sup>th</sup>,

and so on until the 21<sup>st</sup>  
100<sup>s</sup> & 100<sup>s</sup> & 100<sup>s</sup> & 100<sup>s</sup>,  
40<sup>s</sup> & 40<sup>s</sup> & 40<sup>s</sup> & 40<sup>s</sup>,  
and so on & so on to the 20<sup>th</sup>.

**Example 1.10.3.** Show that  $M_2 = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} : a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{Q} \right\}$  is a simple ring.

**Solution.** We know  $M_2$  is a ring under matrix addition and matrix multiplication and has unity  $\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ . We can find two elements  $A$  and  $B$  in  $M_2$  such that  $AB \neq \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$ . For example,

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, B = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \Rightarrow AB = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \neq \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

If we show that  $M_2$  has no proper ideals, then  $M_2$  becomes a simple ring. Let  $A$  be any ideal of  $M_2$ . If  $A = \{0\}$ ,  $0$  being a  $2 \times 2$  null matrix, then there is nothing to prove. Let  $A \neq \{0\}$ . Then there exists a non-zero matrix  $X \in A$  of the form  $X = \begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \end{pmatrix}$ .

Since  $X$  is a non-zero matrix, at least one of the 4 entries in  $X$  is non-zero. Let  $a_{12} \neq 0 \in \mathbb{Q}$ .

We choose four matrices in  $M_2$  as follow :

$$\text{Let } P = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, Q = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, S = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, T = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

We have

$$PXQ = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a_{12} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$SXT = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ a_{11} & a_{12} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12} \end{pmatrix}.$$

Since  $X \in A$  and  $A$  is an ideal of  $M_2$ , therefore  $PXQ + SXT \in A$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} a_{12} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12} \end{pmatrix} \in A \Rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} a_{12} & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12} \end{pmatrix} \in A.$$

Since  $a_{12} \neq 0 \in \mathbb{Q}$ ,  $a_{12}^{-1} \in \mathbb{Q}$ . Consequently,

$$\begin{pmatrix} a_{12}^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12}^{-1} \end{pmatrix} \in M_2 \text{ and } \begin{pmatrix} a_{12} & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12} \end{pmatrix} \in A.$$

Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $M_2$ ,

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a_{12} & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a_{12}^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & a_{12}^{-1} \end{pmatrix} \in A.$$

Thus  $A$  is an ideal of  $M_2$  containing the unity

$$I = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \text{ of } M_2 \text{ and so } A = M_2.$$

Hence  $M_2$  is a simple ring.

**Example 1.10.4.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity. If  $R$  has no right ideals except  $R$  and  $\{0\}$ , then prove that  $R$  is a division ring.

**Solution.** We are given that  $1 \in R$  and so  $R$  becomes a division ring if we show that each non-zero element in  $R$  has its multiplicative inverse in  $R$ . Let  $a \neq 0 \in R$  be arbitrary. Let  $aR = \{ax : x \in R\}$ .

Since  $0 = a \cdot 0 \in aR$ ,  $aR$  is non-empty.

Let  $\alpha, \beta \in aR$  and  $r \in R$ . Then

$$\alpha = ax, \beta = ay, \text{ for some } x, y \in R, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$\Rightarrow \alpha - \beta = ax - ay = a(x - y) \in aR, \text{ as } x - y \in R,$$

and

$$\alpha r = (ax)r = a(xr) \in aR, \text{ as } xr \in R.$$

Thus  $aR$  is a right ideal of  $R$  and so by the given hypothesis,

$$aR = \{0\} \text{ or } aR = R.$$

Since  $1 \in R$  and  $a = a \cdot 1 \in aR$  and  $a \neq 0$ , so  $aR \neq \{0\}$ .

Hence  $aR = R$ . Since  $1 \in R$ , so  $1 \in aR$ . Consequently,

$$1 = ab, \text{ for some } b \in R.$$

From (2), it follows that each non-zero element of  $R$  has a right inverse. Since  $b \neq 0 \in R$  (for otherwise,  $1 = ab = 0$ , a contradiction), there exists some  $c \in R$  such that  $bc = 1$ . ... (2)

We have  $ba = ba \cdot 1$ , since  $1$  is the unity of  $R$

$$= (ba)(bc), \text{ using (3)}$$

$$= b(ab)c$$

$$= (b \cdot 1)c, \text{ by (2)}$$

$$= bc$$

$$= 1, \text{ by (3)}$$

$$\therefore ab = ba = 1$$

$$\Rightarrow a^{-1} = b \in R.$$

Hence  $R$  is a division ring.

**Example 1.10.5.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity. If  $R$  has no left ideals except  $R$  and  $\{0\}$ , then prove that  $R$  is a division ring.

**Hint.** Let  $Ra = \{xa : x \in R\}$ . Then  $Ra$  is a left ideal of  $R$ . Now proceed like Example 1.10.4.

**Example 1.10.6.** If  $R$  be a ring having more than one element such that  $aR = R \forall a \neq 0 \in R$ , then  $R$  is a division ring.

**Solution.** Firstly, we show that  $xy = 0 \Rightarrow x = 0 \text{ or } y = 0 ; x, y \in R$ .

If  $x \neq 0$  and  $y \neq 0$ , then by the given hypothesis,  $xR = R, yR = R$ . ... (1)

Now  $0 = xy \Rightarrow 0 \cdot R = (xy)R = x(yR) = xR = R$ .

$\therefore R = \{0\}$ , a contradiction to the fact that  $R$  has more than one element.

Hence (1) is proved.

Since  $R \neq \{0\}$ , there exists some  $a \neq 0 \in R$ . Further  $aR = R$ .

Now  $a \in R \Rightarrow a \in aR \Rightarrow a = ae \text{ for some } e \in R$ .

It may be noted that  $e \neq 0$ , for otherwise  $a = a0 = 0$ , a contradiction. Since  $a \neq 0$ , therefore

$$\begin{aligned} ae = a &\Rightarrow ae^2 = ae \Rightarrow a(e^2 - e) = 0 \Rightarrow e^2 - e = 0, \text{ using (1)} \\ \therefore e^2 &= e. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(2)$$

Let  $x \in R$  be arbitrary. Then

$$\begin{aligned} (xe - x)e &= xe^2 - xe = xe - xe = 0, \text{ using (2)} \\ \Rightarrow xe - x &= 0, \text{ since } e \neq 0 \text{ and using (1)} \\ \Rightarrow xe &= x \quad \forall x \in R \Rightarrow e \text{ is the right unity of } R. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3)$$

Now we show that each non-zero element of  $R$  has a right inverse.

Let  $x \neq 0 \in R$ . By the given hypothesis,  $xR = R$ .

Since  $e \in R$ ,  $e \in xR \Rightarrow e = xy$ , for some  $y \in R$ .

$\Rightarrow y$  is a right inverse of  $x$ . ...(4)

From (3) and (4), it follows that  $R$  is a division ring.

**Example 1.10.7.** Let  $R$  be a ring such that the only right ideals of  $R$  are  $\{0\}$  and  $R$ . Prove that either  $R$  is a division ring or that  $R$  is a ring with a prime number of elements in which  $ab = 0$  for every  $a, b \in R$ .

**Solution.** Let  $A = \{a \in R : ar = 0 \quad \forall r \in R\}$  or  $A = \{a \in R : aR = 0\}$ . ...(1)

We shall prove that  $A$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .

Let  $a, b \in A$ . Then  $ar = 0$  and  $br = 0 \quad \forall r \in R$ .

We have  $(a - b)r = ar - br = 0 - 0 = 0 \quad \forall r \in R$ .

$\therefore a - b \in A$ .

Let  $a \in A$  and  $x \in R$ . Then  $ar = 0 \quad \forall r \in R$ . ...(2)

We have  $(ax)r = a(xr) = ar_1$ , where  $r_1 = xr \in R$ .

By (2),  $ar_1 = 0$  and so  $(ax)r = 0 \quad \forall r \in R$ .

Thus  $ax \in R$  and so  $A$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .

According to the given hypothesis,  $A = \{0\}$  or  $A = R$ .

**Case I.** Let  $A = \{0\}$ . Then  $aR = \{0\} \Rightarrow a = 0$ .

In other words,  $aR = R \quad \forall a \neq 0 \in R$ .

Hence  $R$  is a division ring. [See Example 1.10.6]

**Case II.** Let  $A = R$ . Then by (1),  $ar = 0 \quad \forall a \in R$  and  $\forall r \in R$  ...(3)

$$ab = 0 \quad \forall a, b \in R.$$

or

Let  $H$  be any subgroup of the additive group  $(R, +)$ .

Then  $x - y \in H \quad \forall x \in H, y \in H$ .

For  $x \in H \subseteq R$ ,  $r \in R \Rightarrow xr = 0 \in H$ , using (3).

Thus  $H$  is a right ideal of  $R$ .

According to the given hypothesis,  $R$  has only two right ideals  $\{0\}$  and  $R$ . Hence  $(R, +)$  can have only two subgroups  $\{0\}$  and  $(R, +)$  i.e.,  $(R, +)$  has no proper subgroups. Consequently,  $(R, +)$  must be a cyclic group of prime order [by Lagrange's Theorem]. Hence  $R$  has a prime number of elements such that  $ab = 0 \quad \forall a, b \in R$ , using (3).

# 2

## Homomorphisms, Maximal & Prime Ideals & Principal Ideal Domains

In this chapter we shall discuss *Homomorphism of Rings, Quotient Rings, Imbedding of Rings, Maximal and Prime Ideals, Divisibility in Rings, Prime and Irreducible Elements and Principal Ideal Domains.*

### 2.1 Homomorphism of Rings

Let  $\{R, +, \cdot\}$  and  $\{R', \oplus, \otimes\}$  be two rings. A mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is called a *homomorphism*, if

- (i)  $f(a + b) = f(a) \oplus f(b)$ ,
- (ii)  $f(a \cdot b) = f(a) \otimes f(b) \quad \forall a, b \in R$ .

The above conditions imply that  $f$  preserves the compositions of the rings  $R$  and  $R'$ .

However, if we agree to use the same compositions  $+$  and  $\cdot$  for both  $R$  and  $R'$ , then

**Definition 1.** A mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is called a *homomorphism*, if

- (i)  $f(a + b) = f(a) + f(b)$ ,
- (ii)  $f(a \cdot b) = f(a) \cdot f(b) \quad \forall a, b \in R$ .

**Remark.** The compositions  $+$  and  $\cdot$  as appearing in  $f(a + b)$  and  $f(a \cdot b)$  are those of  $R$  and  $+$  and  $\cdot$  as appearing in  $f(a) + f(b)$  and  $f(a) \cdot f(b)$  are those of  $R'$ . It is more convenient to drop even  $\cdot$  symbol in the condition (ii), which can be rewritten as :

$$f(ab) = f(a)f(b) \quad \forall a, b \in R.$$

**Definition 2.** A ring  $R'$  is called a *homomorphic image* of a ring  $R$ , if there exists a homomorphism  $f$  of  $R$  onto  $R'$  i.e.,  $f$  is a homomorphism and for each  $r' \in R'$ , there exists some  $r \in R$  such that  $f(r) = r'$ .

**Definition 3.** A mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is called an *isomorphism*, if

- (i)  $f$  is a homomorphism,
- (ii)  $f$  is one-to-one i.e.,  $f(a) = f(b) \Rightarrow a = b$ , for  $a, b \in R$ .

**Definition 4.** Two rings  $R$  and  $R'$  are called *isomorphic*, denoted as  $R \approx R'$ , if there exists a mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  such that

- (i)  $f$  is a homomorphism, (ii)  $f$  is a one-to-one and (iii)  $f$  is onto.

### 2.2 Examples of Homomorphisms

**Example 2.2.1.** If  $R$  is a ring, then the mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R$  defined as  $f(x) = x \quad \forall x \in R$  is a homomorphism.

**Solution.** For any  $x, y \in R$ , we see that

$$f(x+y) = x+y = f(x)+f(y),$$

and  $f(xy) = xy = f(x)f(y)$ . Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism.

**Example 2.2.2.** If  $R$  is a ring, the mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R$  defined as  $f(x) = 0 \forall x \in R$  is a homomorphism.

**Solution.** For any  $x, y \in R$ , we see that

$$f(x+y) = 0 = 0+0 = f(x)+f(y),$$

and  $f(xy) = 0 = 0 \cdot 0 = f(x)f(y)$ . Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism.

**Example 2.2.3.** Let  $\mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{2}] = \{m+n\sqrt{2} : m, n \text{ are integers}\}$ .

The mapping  $f: \mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{2}] \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{2}]$  defined as  $f(m+n\sqrt{2}) = m-n\sqrt{2}$  is a homomorphism.

**Solution.** Let  $x = a+b\sqrt{2} \in \mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{2}]$ ,  $y = c+d\sqrt{2} \in \mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{2}]$ .

Then  $x+y = (a+c)+(b+d)\sqrt{2}$ ,  $xy = (ac+2bd)+(ad+bc)\sqrt{2}$ .

We have

$$f(x+y) = (a+c)-(b+d)\sqrt{2} = (a-b\sqrt{2})+(c-d\sqrt{2}) = f(x)+f(y),$$

$$f(xy) = (ac+2bd)-(ad+bc)\sqrt{2} = (a-b\sqrt{2})(c-d\sqrt{2}) = f(x)f(y).$$

Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism.

**Example 2.2.4.** Let  $R = \mathbf{Z}$  and  $R' = \text{set of all even integers}$ . Then  $(R', +, *)$  is a ring, where  $a * b = \frac{1}{2}ab \forall a, b \in R'$ . The mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  defined as  $f(a) = 2a \forall a \in R$  is a homomorphism.

**Solution.** For any  $a, b \in R$ ; we have

$$f(a+b) = 2(a+b) = 2a+2b = f(a)+f(b),$$

$$f(ab) = 2(ab) = \frac{(2a)(2b)}{2} = (2a)*(2b) = f(a)*f(b).$$

Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism.

**Example 2.2.5.** Let  $R$  be the ring of all complex numbers and  $R'$  the ring of all  $2 \times 2$  matrices of the form  $\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{pmatrix}$ , where  $a$  and  $b$  are real numbers. Then the mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  defined as

$$f(a+ib) = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{pmatrix} \text{ is a homomorphism.}$$

**Solution.** Let  $x = a+ib$ ,  $y = c+id \in R$ . Then

$$x+y = (a+c)+i(b+d), \quad xy = (ac-bd)+i(ad+bc).$$

$$f(x) = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{pmatrix}, \quad f(y) = \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ -d & c \end{pmatrix}, \quad f(x+y) = \begin{pmatrix} a+c & b+d \\ -b-d & a+c \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\text{or } f(x+y) = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ -d & c \end{pmatrix} = f(x)+f(y),$$

$$f(xy) = \begin{pmatrix} ac-bd & ad+bc \\ -ad-bc & ac-bd \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ -d & c \end{pmatrix} = f(x)f(y).$$

Hence  $f$  is a homomorphism.

**Example 2.2.6.** Let  $R$  be a commutative ring such that  $2x = 0 \forall x \in R$ . Then the mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R$  defined as  $f(x) = x^2$  is a homomorphism.

**Solution.** Let  $x, y \in R$ . Then  $f(x+y) = (x+y)^2 = x^2 + 2xy + y^2 = x^2 + y^2$ , since  $R$  is commutative and  $2x = 0 \forall x \in R$ .

$$\therefore f(x+y) = f(x) + f(y).$$

Again,  $f(xy) = (xy)^2 = x^2 y^2$ , since  $R$  is commutative.

$$\therefore f(xy) = f(x)f(y).$$

Hence  $f$  is a homomorphism.

**Example 2.2.7.** Show that  $f: \mathbf{Z}_2 \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}_2$  defined by  $f(n) = n^2 - n$  is a ring homomorphism.

**Solution.** We know  $\mathbf{Z}_2 = \{0, 1\}$ . Let  $n, m \in \mathbf{Z}_2$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} f(n+m) &= (n+m)^2 - (n+m) \\ &= (n^2 - n) + (m^2 - m) \quad [\because 2nm = 0 \text{ in } \mathbf{Z}_2] \\ &= f(n) + f(m). \end{aligned}$$

Again

$$\begin{aligned} f(nm) &= n^2 m^2 - nm \\ &= (n^2 - n)(m^2 - m) + nm(n+m) - 2nm \\ &= (n^2 - n)(m^2 - m) = f(n)f(m) \end{aligned}$$

[Notice that  $nm(n+m) = 0 \forall n, m \in \mathbf{Z}_2$ ].

Hence  $f$  is a ring homomorphism.

### 2.3 Theorems on Homomorphisms

In the following theorems ;  $R$  and  $R'$  denote two rings.

**Theorem 2.3.1.** If  $R \rightarrow R'$  is a homomorphism, then

1.  $f(0) = 0'$ .

2.  $f(-a) = -f(a)$ ,  $a \in R$ .

**Proof 1.** We know  $a+0=0 \forall a \in R$ . In particular,  $0+0=0$ .

$$\therefore f(0) = f(0+0) \Rightarrow f(0) = f(0) + f(0), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homo.}$$

$$\Rightarrow f(0) + 0' = f(0) + f(0). \quad [\because 0' \in R' \text{ and } f(0) \in R']$$

Hence, by cancellation law in the additive group  $(R', +)$ ,  
 $0' = f(0)$ .

2. We have  $a + (-a) = 0 \Rightarrow f[a + (-a)] = f(0)$

$$\Rightarrow f(a) + f(-a) = f(0), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism.}$$

$$\Rightarrow f(a) + f(-a) = 0', \text{ since } f(0) = 0'.$$

Similarly,  $f(-a) + f(a) = 0'$ .

Hence

$$f(-a) = -f(a).$$

**Remark.** It is more convenient to take  $f(0) = 0$ , keeping in mind that  $0$  on the R.H.S. of the equation [ $f(0) = 0$ ] is the zero element of  $R'$ .

**Theorem 2.3.2.** Show that :

- (a) The homomorphic image of a commutative ring is a commutative ring. The converse need not be true.
- (b) The homomorphic image a ring with unity is a ring with unity. The converse need not be true.

**Proof.** (a) Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be an onto homomorphism, where  $R$  is a commutative ring. We have to show that  $R'$  is also a commutative ring. Let  $a', b'$  be any two arbitrary elements of  $R'$ . Since  $f$  is onto, there exist some elements  $a, b \in R$  such that

$$f(a) = a' \text{ and } f(b) = b'. \quad \dots(1)$$

We have 
$$\begin{aligned} a' b' &= f(a)f(b) = f(ab), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &= f(ba), \text{ since } R \text{ is commutative} \\ &= f(b)f(a), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &= b'a', \text{ by (1)} \end{aligned}$$

$$\therefore a' b' = b'a' \forall a', b' \in R'. \text{ Hence } R' \text{ is commutative.}$$

However, the converse of the above result may not be true i.e., if  $R'$  is a homomorphic image of a ring  $R$ , where  $R'$  is a commutative ring, then  $R$  may not be a commutative ring.

Let 
$$R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \text{ are integers} \right\}.$$

Then  $R$  is a non-commutative ring under matrix addition and matrix multiplication. Notice that

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

We shall prove that the mapping  $f: R \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}$  defined as

$$f \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = a \quad \dots(1)$$

is an onto homomorphism.

Let  $X = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R, Y = \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R$ . We have

$$X + Y = \begin{pmatrix} a+c & b+d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } XY = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Now  $f(X+Y) = a+c = f(X)+f(Y)$ , by (1)

and  $f(XY) = ac = f(X)f(Y)$ , by (1).

Obviously,  $f$  is onto, since for any  $x \in \mathbf{Z}$

$$\begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R \text{ and } f \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = x. \text{ (Here } y \in \mathbf{Z})$$

Hence  $\mathbf{Z}$  is a homomorphic image of  $R$ , where  $\mathbf{Z}$  is a commutative ring and  $R$  is a non-commutative ring.

**Theorem 2.3.2.** Show that :

- (a) The homomorphic image of a commutative ring is a commutative ring. The converse need not be true.
- (b) The homomorphic image a ring with unity is a ring with unity. The converse need not be true.

**Proof.** (a) Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be an onto homomorphism, where  $R$  is a commutative ring. We have to show that  $R'$  is also a commutative ring. Let  $a', b'$  be any two arbitrary elements of  $R'$ . Since  $f$  is onto, there exist some elements  $a, b \in R$  such that

$$f(a) = a' \text{ and } f(b) = b'. \quad \dots(1)$$

We have  $a' b' = f(a)f(b) = f(ab)$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism  
 $= f(ba)$ , since  $R$  is commutative  
 $= f(b)f(a)$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism  
 $= b' a'$ , by (1)

$\therefore a' b' = b' a' \forall a', b' \in R'$ . Hence  $R'$  is commutative.

However, the converse of the above result may not be true i.e., if  $R'$  is a homomorphic image of a ring  $R$ , where  $R'$  is a commutative ring, then  $R$  may not be a commutative ring.

Let  $R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \text{ are integers} \right\}$ .

Then  $R$  is a non-commutative ring under matrix addition and matrix multiplication. Notice that

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 2 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

We shall prove that the mapping  $f: R \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}$  defined as

$$f \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = a \quad \dots(1)$$

is an onto homomorphism.

Let  $X = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R$ ,  $Y = \begin{pmatrix} c & d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R$ . We have

$$X + Y = \begin{pmatrix} a+c & b+d \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } XY = \begin{pmatrix} ac & ad \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Now  $f(X + Y) = a + c = f(X) + f(Y)$ , by (1)

and  $f(XY) = ac = f(X)f(Y)$ , by (1).

Obviously,  $f$  is onto, since for any  $x \in \mathbf{Z}$

$$\begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \in R \text{ and } f \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} x & y \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = x. \text{ (Here } y \in \mathbf{Z})$$

Hence  $\mathbf{Z}$  is a homomorphic image of  $R$ , where  $\mathbf{Z}$  is a commutative ring.

(b) Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be an onto homomorphism, where  $R$  is a ring with unity  $1 \in R$ . We shall prove that  $f(1)$  is the unity of  $R'$ . Let  $a' \in R'$ , be arbitrary. Since  $f$  is onto, there exists some  $a \in R$  such that  $f(a) = a'$ .

We have

$$f(1) \cdot a' = f(1) \cdot f(a) = f(1 \cdot a) = f(a) = a', \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism.}$$

Similarly,  $a' \cdot f(1) = a'$ . Hence  $f(1)$  is the unity of  $R'$ .

However, the converse of the above result may not be true i.e., if  $R'$  is a homomorphic image of a ring  $R$ , where  $R'$  is a ring with unity, then  $R$  may not have unity. Refer to the above example.  $R = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a, b \in \mathbb{Z} \right\}$  is a ring without unity and  $\mathbb{Z}$  is a ring with unity. The mapping  $f: R \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}$  defined as  $f \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = a$  is an onto homomorphism.

### Definition. (Kernel of a Homomorphism)

If  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be a homomorphism, then the kernel of  $f$ , denoted as  $\text{Ker } f$ , is defined as

$$\text{Ker } f = \{a \in R : f(a) = 0' \in R'\}.$$

**Remark.** Since  $f$  is a homomorphism,  $f(0) = 0'$  and so  $0 \in \text{Ker } f$ . This shows that  $\text{Ker } f$  is always non-empty.

**Theorem 2.3.3.** If  $R \rightarrow R'$  is a homomorphism, then  $\text{Ker } f$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R$ .

**Proof.** By definition,  $\text{Ker } f = \{a \in R : f(a) = 0' \in R'\}$ . [D.U., 1994]

Then  $\text{Ker } f$  is non-empty, since  $f(0) = 0' \Rightarrow 0 \in \text{Ker } f$ .

Let  $a, b \in \text{Ker } f$  be arbitrary. Then  $f(a) = f(b) = 0'$ .

We have  $f(a - b) = f[a + (-b)] = f(a) + f(-b) = f(a) - f(b)$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism.

$$\therefore f(a - b) = 0' - 0' = 0' \Rightarrow a - b \in \text{Ker } f.$$

For any  $r \in R$  and  $a \in \text{Ker } f$ , we have

$$f(ar) = f(a)f(r), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism}$$

$$= 0' \cdot f(r) = 0', \text{ since } f(a) = 0'$$

$$\therefore f(ar) = 0' \Rightarrow ar \in \text{Ker } f.$$

Similarly,  $ra \in \text{Ker } f$ . Hence  $\text{Ker } f$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

**Theorem 2.3.4.** If  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is a homomorphism, then  $\text{Ker } f = \{0\}$  if and only if  $f$  is one-to-one.

**Proof. Condition is necessary**

Let  $\text{Ker } f = \{0\}$ . We shall prove that  $f$  is one-to-one.

Let  $f(a) = f(b)$ , where  $a, b \in R$

$$\Rightarrow f(a) - f(b) = 0' \Rightarrow f(a - b) = 0', \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism}$$

$$\Rightarrow a - b \in \text{Ker } f \Rightarrow a - b = 0 \Rightarrow a = b.$$

Hence  $f$  is one-to-one.

*Condition is sufficient*

Let  $f$  be one-to-one. We shall prove  $\text{Ker } f = \{0\}$ .

Let  $x \in \text{Ker } f$  be arbitrary. Then  $f(x) = 0'$

or  $f(x) = f(0)$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism implies  $f(0) = 0'$

$$\therefore x = 0, \text{ since } f \text{ is one-to-one.}$$

Hence  $\text{Ker } f = \{0\}$ .

### EXAMPLES

**Example 2.3.1.** Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be an onto homomorphism, where  $R$  is a ring with unity 1. Show that  $f(1)$  is the unity of  $R'$ .

**Solution.** Let  $a' \in R'$  be arbitrary. Since  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is onto, there exists some  $a \in R$  such that  $f(a) = a'$ . We have

$$f(1) \cdot a' = f(1) \cdot f(a) = f(1 \cdot a) = f(a) = a',$$

since  $f$  is a homomorphism and  $1 \cdot a = a \forall a \in R$ .

Similarly,  $a' \cdot f(1) = a'$ . Hence  $f(1)$  is the unity of  $R'$ .

**Example 2.3.2.** If  $R$  is a ring with unity 1 and  $f$  is a homomorphism of  $R$  into an integral domain  $R'$  with  $\text{Ker } f \neq R$ , prove that  $f(1)$  is the unity of  $R'$ . [D.U., 1999]

**Solution.** Let  $a' \in R'$  be arbitrary. We shall prove that

$$f(1) a' = a' f(1) = a'.$$

$$\text{Obviously, } f(1) a' - f(1) a' = 0'$$

$$\Rightarrow f(1 \cdot 1) a' - f(1) a' = 0', \text{ since } 1 \text{ is the unity of } R$$

$$\Rightarrow f(1) f(1) a' - f(1) a' = 0', \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism}$$

$$\Rightarrow f(1) [f(1) a' - a'] = 0'$$

$$\Rightarrow f(1) = 0' \text{ or } f(1) a' - a' = 0', \text{ since } R \text{ is an integral domain}$$

If  $f(1) = 0'$ , then  $1 \in \text{Ker } f$ , where  $\text{Ker } f$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

Consequently,  $r = 1 \cdot r \in \text{Ker } f \forall r \in R$  and so  $\text{Ker } f = R$

This is contrary to the given hypothesis and so

$$f(1) a' - a' = 0' \text{ or } f(1) a' = a' \forall a' \in R'.$$

Similarly, by considering  $a' f(1) - a' f(1) = 0'$ , we can prove

$$a' f(1) = a' \forall a' \in R'.$$

Hence  $f(1)$  is the unity of  $R'$ .

**Example 2.3.3.** Prove that any homomorphism of a field is either an isomorphism or takes each element into 0.

**Solution.** Let  $f$  be a homomorphism of a field  $F$  into a ring  $R$ .  
 $f: F \rightarrow R$  is a homomorphism. Then  $\text{Ker } f$  is an ideal of the field  $F$ . Since  
the only ideals of a field  $F$  are  $(0)$  and  $F$  [See Example 1.9.5 of Chapter  
so]

$$\text{Ker } f = (0) \quad \text{or} \quad \text{Ker } f = F.$$

**Case I.** Let  $\text{Ker } f = (0)$ . Then  $f$  is one-to-one (Theorem 2.3.4). Since  
 $f$  is a homomorphism and one-to-one,  $f$  is an isomorphism.

**Case II.** Let  $\text{Ker } f = F$ . Then  $x \in \text{Ker } f \forall x \in F$  i.e.,  $f(x) = 0 \forall x \in F$ .  
Hence  $f$  takes each element of  $F$  into zero.

**Example 2.3.4.** Prove that any homomorphism of a field is either  
one-to-one or it takes every element to zero. [D.U., 1999]

**Solution.** Similar to Example 2.3.3.

**Example 2.3.5.** Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be a homomorphism.

Let  $f(R) = \{f(a) : a \in R\}$ . Show that

(a)  $f(R)$  is a subring of  $R'$ .

(b) If  $R$  is commutative, then  $f(R)$  is commutative.

(c) If  $R$  has unity 1, then  $f(1)$  is the unity of the subring  $f(R)$ .

**Solution.** (a) Let  $x, y \in f(R)$  be arbitrary. Then

$$x = f(a), y = f(b) \quad \text{for some } a, b \in R.$$

We have  $x - y = f(a) - f(b) = f(a - b)$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism

$$xy = f(a)f(b) = f(ab), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism}$$

Clearly,  $a - b \in R$  and  $ab \in R$  and so  $f(a - b) \in f(R)$ ,  $f(ab) \in f(R)$ .

It follows that  $x - y \in f(R)$  and  $xy \in f(R)$ .

Hence  $f(R)$  is a subring of  $R'$ .

For parts (b) and (c), refer to Theorem 2.3.2.

**Remark.**  $f(R)$  is called the homomorphic image of  $R$ .

**Example 2.3.6.** Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be a homomorphism and let  $A$  be an ideal of  $R$ . Show that  $f(A)$  is an ideal of  $f(R)$ .

**Solution.** We have  $f(A) = \{f(a) : a \in A\}$ .

Then  $f(A)$  is non-empty, since  $0 \in A \Rightarrow f(0) \in f(A)$ .

Let  $x, y \in f(A)$ . Then  $x = f(a_1), y = f(a_2)$ , for  $a_1, a_2 \in A$ .

$\Rightarrow x - y = f(a_1) - f(a_2) = f(a_1 - a_2)$ , as  $f$  is a homomorphism.

Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$  and  $a_1, a_2 \in A$ , so  $a_1 - a_2 \in A$ .

$\Rightarrow f(a_1 - a_2) \in f(A) \Rightarrow x - y \in f(A)$ .

Let  $\alpha \in f(R)$  and  $x \in f(A)$ .

Then  $\alpha = f(r)$ ,  $x = f(a_1)$ , for some  $r \in R$ ,  $a_1 \in A$ . We have

$$\alpha x = f(r)f(a_1) = f(ra_1), \text{ as } f \text{ is a homomorphism.}$$

Since  $A$  is an ideal of  $R$ , so  $r \in R$  and  $a_1 \in A \Rightarrow ra_1 \in A$ .

$$\therefore f(ra_1) \in f(A) \Rightarrow \alpha x \in f(A).$$

Similarly,  $x\bar{\alpha} \in f(A)$ . Hence  $f(A)$  is an ideal of  $f(R)$ .

**Example 2.3.7.** Let  $f$  be an isomorphism of a ring  $R$  onto a ring  $R'$ . Show that

- (a) If  $R$  is an integral domain, then  $R'$  is also an integral domain.
- (b) If  $R$  is a field, then  $R'$  is also a field.

**Solution.** (a) Let  $R$  be an integral domain. Since  $R$  is commutative and  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is an onto homomorphism,  $R'$  is also commutative. Now we show that  $R'$  is without zero divisors. Let  $a', b' \in R'$  be such that

$$a' b' = 0.$$

Since  $f$  is one-to-one and onto, there exist unique  $a, b \in R$  such that

$$f(a) = a' \text{ and } f(b) = b'.$$

$$\text{Now } a' b' = 0' \Rightarrow f(a)f(b) = 0'$$

$$\Rightarrow f(ab) = f(0), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism}$$

$$\Rightarrow ab = 0, \text{ since } f \text{ is one-to-one}$$

$$\Rightarrow a = 0 \text{ or } b = 0, \text{ since } R \text{ is an integral domain}$$

$$\Rightarrow f(a) = f(0) \text{ or } f(b) = f(0)$$

$$\Rightarrow a' = 0' \text{ or } b' = 0', \text{ since } f(0) = 0'.$$

Thus  $a' b' = 0' \Rightarrow a' = 0' \text{ or } b' = 0' \Rightarrow R'$  has no zero divisors.

Hence  $R'$  is an integral domain.

(b) Let  $R$  be a field. Since  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is an onto homomorphism and since  $R$  is a commutative ring with unity 1, so  $R'$  is also a commutative ring with unity  $f(1)$  [See Theorem 2.3.2]. Finally, we show that every non-zero element of  $R'$  has its multiplicative inverse. Let  $a'$  be any non-zero element of  $R'$ . Since  $f$  is one-to-one and onto, there exists a unique non-zero element  $a \in R$  such that  $f(a) = a'$ . Notice that if  $a = 0$ , then  $f(a) = f(0) = 0'$  and so  $a' = 0'$ , a contradiction. Since  $R$  is a field and  $a \neq 0 \in R$ ,  $a^{-1} \in R$  exists and  $aa^{-1} = a^{-1}a = 1$ .

$$\text{Now } aa^{-1} = 1 \Rightarrow f(aa^{-1}) = f(1) \Rightarrow f(a)f(a^{-1}) = f(1)$$

$$\Rightarrow a' f(a^{-1}) = f(1).$$

$$\text{Similarly, } a^{-1} a = 1 \Rightarrow f(a^{-1}) a' = f(1).$$

$$\therefore (a')^{-1} = f(a^{-1}) \in R'.$$

Hence  $R'$  is a field.

**Example 2.3.8.** Prove that

(a) Every isomorphic image of an integral domain is an integral domain.

(b) Every isomorphic image of a field is a field.

(c) Every isomorphic image of a division ring is a division ring.

**Solution.** Same as Example 2.3.7.

**Example 2.3.9.** Let  $R$  be a ring with unity. Using its elements, we define a ring  $R'$  by defining

$$a \oplus b = a + b + 1 \text{ and } a \otimes b = ab + a + b \quad \forall a, b \in R.$$

Prove that  $R$  is isomorphic to  $R'$ .

**Solution.** Define a mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  as  $f(a) = a - 1 \quad \forall a \in R$ .  
 Then  $f(a+b) = a+b-1 = (a-1)+(b-1)+1 = f(a)+f(b)+1$

or  $f(a+b) = f(a) \oplus f(b)$ .

Again  $f(ab) = ab - 1$ ,

and  $f(a) \otimes f(b) = f(a)f(b) + f(a) + f(b)$

$$= (a-1)(b-1) + (a-1) + (b-1)$$

$$= ab - a - b + 1 + a - 1 + b - 1 = ab - 1.$$

$\therefore f(ab) = f(a) \otimes f(b)$  and so  $f$  is a homomorphism.

Further,  $f$  is one-to-one ; since  $f(a) = f(b) \Rightarrow a - 1 = b - 1 \Rightarrow a = b$

For any  $a \in R'$ ,  $a = (a+1) - 1 \Rightarrow a = f(b)$ , where  $b = a+1 \in R$

$\Rightarrow f$  is onto. Hence  $R \approx R'$ .

**Example 2.3.10.** Prove that the only homomorphisms from  $\mathbb{Z}$  to  $\mathbb{Z}$  ( $\mathbb{Z}$  being the ring of integers) are the identity and zero mappings. [D.U., 2000]

**Solution.** Let  $f: \mathbb{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}$  be any homomorphism.

If  $f(x) = 0 \quad \forall x \in \mathbb{Z}$ , then  $f$  is the zero mapping.

Let  $f$  be a non-zero homomorphism i.e.,  $f(x) \neq 0$  for each  $x \neq 0 \in \mathbb{Z}$ .

Then  $\{f(1)\}^2 = f(1) \cdot f(1) = f(1+1) = f(1) \neq 0$ .

It follows that  $f(1)$  is a non-zero idempotent element in  $\mathbb{Z}$ .

Since the only non-zero idempotent in  $\mathbb{Z}$  is 1, so  $f(1) = 1$ .

For any  $n \in \mathbb{Z}$  and  $n > 0$ , we have

$$f(n) = f(\underbrace{1+1+\dots+1}_{n \text{ times}}) = f(1) + f(1) + \dots + f(1) = \underbrace{1+1+\dots+1}_{n \text{ times}} = n.$$

If  $n < 0$ , we can write  $n = -m$ ,  $m$  being a positive integer.

Then  $f(n) = f(-m) = -f(m)$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism  
 $= -m$ , since  $f(m) = m > 0$ , as proved above

$\therefore f(n) = n$ , if  $n < 0$ .

Obviously,  $f(0) = 0$ , if  $n = 0$ .

Hence  $f(n) = n \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{Z}$  i.e.,  $f$  is the identity mapping.

**Example 2.3.11.** Let  $R$  and  $R'$  be two rings. A mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is called an antihomomorphism, if

$$f(x+y) = f(x) + f(y) \quad \text{and} \quad f(xy) = f(y)f(x) \quad \forall x, y \in R.$$

Let  $f, g$  be two antihomomorphisms of a ring  $R$  into  $R$ . Prove that  $fg: R \rightarrow R$  is a homomorphism.

**Solution.** Let  $x, y \in R$ . Then

$$(fg)(x+y) = f(g(x+y)) = f(g(x) + g(y)) = f(g(x)) + f(g(y))$$

$= (fg)(x) + (fg)(y)$ , since  $f$  and  $g$  are antihomomorphisms

Again  $(fg)(xy) = f(g(xy)) = f(g(y)g(x)) = f(g(x))f(g(y))$

$= (fg)(x)(fg)(y)$ , since  $f$  and  $g$  are antihomomorphisms

Hence  $fg: R \rightarrow R$  is a homomorphism.

EXERCISES

1. If  $\mathbf{C}$  is the ring of complex numbers, show that the mapping  $f: \mathbf{C} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$  defined as  $f(x + iy) = x - iy$ , is an onto isomorphism.

2. Show that every isomorphic image of a ring without zero divisors is a ring without zero divisors.

[Hint. See Example 2.3.7 (a).]

3. Show that any non-zero homomorphism of a field  $F$  into a ring  $R$  is one-to-one.

[Hint. See Example 2.3.4.]

4. Let  $F$  be a field and let  $f: F \rightarrow F$  be a non-zero homomorphism. Show that  $f$  need not be onto.

[Hint.  $\mathbf{Z}_3 = \{0, 1, 2\}$ ,  $\mathbf{Z}_5 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4\}$ ] are fields modulo 3 and modulo 5, respectively. The mapping  $f: \mathbf{Z}_3 \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}_5$  defined as  $f(0) = 0$ ,  $f(1) = 1$ ,  $f(2) = 2$  is a non-zero homomorphism. However,  $f$  is not onto.]

5. Show that the relation of isomorphism in the set of all rings is an equivalence relation.

[Hint. (i)  $R \approx R$ , since the identity mapping  $I: R \rightarrow R$  is 1-1, onto and homomorphism.

(ii)  $R_1 \approx R_2 \Rightarrow R_2 \approx R_1$ .

If  $f: R_1 \rightarrow R_2$  is 1-1, onto and homomorphism, then  $f^{-1}: R_2 \rightarrow R_1$  is 1-1, onto and homomorphism.

(iii)  $R_1 \approx R_2$  and  $R_2 \approx R_3 \Rightarrow R_1 \approx R_3$ .

Let  $f: R_1 \rightarrow R_2$  be 1-1, onto and homomorphism, and

$g: R_2 \rightarrow R_3$  be 1-1, onto and homomorphism. Then

$gof: R_1 \rightarrow R_3$  is also 1-1, onto and homomorphism.]

6. Give an example of a homomorphism  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  such that  $R$  has unity, but  $R'$  does not have unity.

[Hint.  $f: \mathbf{Z} \rightarrow \mathbf{E}$  (even integers) defined as  $f(x) = 0 \forall x \in \mathbf{Z}$  is a homomorphism, where 1 is the unity of  $\mathbf{Z}$ , but  $\mathbf{E}$  does not have unity.]

7. Give an example of a homomorphism  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  such that 1 is the unity of  $R$ , but  $f(1)$  is not the unity of  $R'$ .

[Hint.  $f: \mathbf{Z} \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}$  defined as  $f(x) = 0 \forall x \in \mathbf{Z}$  is a homomorphism, where 1 is the unity of  $\mathbf{Z}$ , but  $f(1) = 0$  is not the unity of  $\mathbf{Z}$ . Notice that  $f$  is not onto.]

8. Let  $A$  be the ring of all continuous, real-valued functions defined on  $[0, 1]$  and  $\mathbf{R}$  the field of real numbers. Show that the mapping  $\phi: A \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$  defined by  $\phi(f(x)) = f(\frac{1}{2})$ ,  $\forall f(x) \in A$  is an onto homomorphism. Find the kernel of  $\phi$ . (Ans.  $\text{Ker } \phi = \{f(x) \in A : f(\frac{1}{2}) = 0\}$ )

9. Let  $M_2 = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} : a \in R \right\}$ ,  $R$  being the field of real numbers. Show that the mapping  $f: M_2 \rightarrow R$  defined by  $f \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} = a$  is an isomorphism of  $M_2$  onto  $R$ .
10. Let  $R$  be a commutative ring such that  $px = 0 \forall x \in R$ ,  $p$  being a prime number. Define  $f: R \rightarrow R$  such that  $f(x) = x^p$ . Show that  $f$  is a homomorphism.
- [Hint. Let  $x, y \in R$ . Since  $R$  is commutative,  $(xy)^p = x^p y^p$  and  $(x+y)^p = x^p + p_{c_1} x^{p-1} y + p_{c_2} x^{p-2} y^2 + \dots + y^p$ .  
 $\therefore f(xy) = f(x)f(y)$  and  $f(x+y) = x^p + 0 + 0 + \dots + 0 + y^p = f(x) + f(y)$ , since  $px = 0 \forall x \in R$ ]
11. Let  $R, S, T$  be three rings such that  $f: R \rightarrow S$  and  $g: S \rightarrow T$  are homomorphisms. Show that  $gf: R \rightarrow T$  is a homomorphism.
12. Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be a homomorphism. Prove that if  $A$  is a right (left) ideal of  $R$ , then  $f(A)$  is a right (left) ideal of  $R'$ .  
[Hint. Similar to Example 2.3.6]
- 2.4 Quotient Rings and Fundamental Theorem of Homomorphism

**Theorem 2.4.1.** If  $U$  is an ideal of a ring  $R$ , then  $R/U$  is a ring and is a homomorphic image of  $R$  with kernel  $U$ .

**Proof.** If  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ , we define

$$\frac{R}{U} = \{a + U : a \in R\}.$$

We define two compositions in  $R/U$  as follow :

$$(a + U) + (b + U) = (a + b) + U, \quad \dots(1)$$

$$(a + U)(b + U) = ab + U \quad \forall a, b \in R. \quad \dots(2)$$

Firstly, we show that these compositions are well defined i.e., we have

$$a + U = a' + U \text{ and } b + U = b' + U,$$

then  $(a + b) + U = (a' + b') + U$  and  $ab + U = a'b' + U$ .

We have  $a = a + 0 \in a + U = a' + U \Rightarrow a = a' + u_1$ , for  $u_1 \in U$ .

Similarly,  $b = b' + u_2$ , for  $u_2 \in U$ .

$$\therefore a + b = a' + u_1 + b' + u_2 = a' + b' + u_1 + u_2$$

$$(a + b) - (a' + b') = u_1 + u_2 \in U, \text{ since } U \text{ is an ideal of } R.$$

Thus  $(a + b) + U = (a' + b') + U$ .

[We know  $a + H = b + H \Leftrightarrow a - b \in H$ , where  $H$  is a subgroup of the group  $(R, +)$ ]

HOMOMORPHIS

Again

$ab -$

or [Notice t

$u_1 u_2 \in U \Rightarrow a$

$\therefore ab \in$

It follow

Next we show

Let  $a +$

1.  $(a +$

2.  $(a -$

3.  $(a$

4.  $(a$

T

W

5.  $(a$

T

6.  $(a$

7.  $(a$

8.

9.

Fin

U. We d

Cle

Again  $ab = (a' + u_1)(b' + u_2) = a'b' + a'u_2 + u_1b' + u_1u_2$   
 or  $ab - a'b' = a'u_2 + u_1b' + u_1u_2 \in U$ .

[Notice that  $U$  is a two-sided ideal of  $R \Rightarrow a'u_2 \in U, u_1b' \in U$  and  $u_1u_2 \in U \Rightarrow a'u_2 + u_1b' + u_1u_2 \in U$ ]

$$\therefore ab + U = a'b' + U.$$

It follows that the compositions given in (1) and (2) are well-defined.  
 Next we show that  $R/U$  is a ring w.r.t. these compositions.

Let  $a + U, b + U, c + U \in R/U$ . Then

$$1. (a + U) + (b + U) = (a + b) + U \in R/U, \text{ by (1).}$$

$$2. (a + U) + (b + U) = (a + b) + U \\ = (b + a) + U = (b + U) + (a + U), \text{ by (1).}$$

$$3. (a + U) + \{(b + U) + (c + U)\} = (a + U) + \{(b + c) + U\}, \text{ by (1)} \\ = \{a + (b + c)\} + U, \text{ by (1)} \\ = \{(a + b) + c\} + U, \text{ by asso. law in } (R, +) \\ = \{(a + b) + U\} + (c + U), \text{ by (1)} \\ = \{(a + U) + (b + U)\} + (c + U), \text{ by (1)}$$

$$4. (a + U) + (0 + U) = (a + 0) + U = a + U \quad \forall a + U \in R/U.$$

Thus  $0 + U = U$  is the zero element of  $R/U$ .

We often write  $U$  as  $\bar{0}$ .

$$5. (a + U) + (-a + U) = \{a + (-a)\} + U = 0 + U = U.$$

Thus  $-a + U \in R/U$  is the additive inverse of  $a + U$ .

$$6. (a + U)(b + U) = ab + U \in R/U, \text{ by (2).}$$

$$7. (a + U)\{(b + U)(c + U)\} = (a + U)(bc + U), \text{ by (2)} \\ = a(bc) + U, \text{ by (2)} \\ = (ab)c + U, \text{ by asso. law in } R \\ = (ab + U)(c + U), \text{ by (2)} \\ = \{(a + U)(b + U)\}(c + U), \text{ by (2).}$$

$$8. (a + U)\{(b + U) + (c + U)\} = (a + U)\{(b + c) + U\}, \text{ by (1)}$$

$$= a(b + c) + U, \text{ by (2)} \\ = (ab + ac) + U, \text{ by dist. law in } R \\ = (ab + U) + (ac + U), \text{ by (1)} \\ = (a + U)(b + U) + (a + U)(c + U), \text{ by (2)}$$

$$9. \text{ Similarly, } \{(a + U) + (b + U)\}(c + U) = (a + U)(c + U) + (b + U)(c + U).$$

Hence  $R/U$  is a ring.

Finally, we show that  $R/U$  is a homomorphic image of  $R$  with kernel  $U$ . We define a mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R/U$  as

$$f(a) = a + U \quad \forall a \in R. \quad \dots(3)$$

Clearly,  $f$  is well-defined, since  $a = b \Rightarrow a + U = b + U$ .

Let  $a, b \in R$ . From (3), we have

$$\begin{aligned} f(a+b) &= (a+U) + (b+U) \\ &= (a+U) + (b+U), \text{ by (1)} \\ &= f(a) + f(b), \text{ by (3)} \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} f(ab) &= ab + U, \text{ by (3)} \\ &= (a+U)(b+U), \text{ by (2)} \\ &= f(a)f(b), \text{ by (3).} \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism.

If  $X \in R/U$  is arbitrary, then  $X = a_1 + U$ , for some  $a_1 \in R$ . Consequently,  $X = f(a_1)$ ,  $a_1 \in R$  and so  $f$  is onto. Hence  $R/U$  is a homomorphic image of  $R$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned} a \in \text{Ker } f &\Leftrightarrow f(a) = \bar{0} \in R/U (\bar{0} = U) \\ &\Leftrightarrow f(a) = U. \\ &\Leftrightarrow a + U = U \Leftrightarrow a \in U \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $\text{Ker } f = U$ .

**Remarks :**

1. The ring  $R/U = \{a+U : a \in R\}$  is called a **quotient ring** or **difference ring** of  $R$ . The quotient ring  $R/U$  is defined only when  $U$  is an ideal of  $R$ .

2.  $R/U$  is commutative, if  $R$  is commutative.

We have

$$(a+U)(b+U) = ab + U = ba + U$$

$$= (b+U)(a+U); a, b \in R.$$

3. If  $R$  has unity 1, then  $1+U$  is the unity of  $R/U$ .

We have  $(a+U)(1+U) = a \cdot 1 + U = a + U \quad \forall a+U \in R/U$ .

4. If  $R$  is a boolean ring, so is  $R/U$ .

We have  $(a+U)^2 = (a+U)(a+U) = a^2 + U = a + U. \quad (\because a^2 = a)$

### EXAMPLES

**Example 2.4.1.** Show that the set  $A = \{5x : x \in \mathbb{Z}\}$  is an ideal of  $\mathbb{Z}$ .

Determine the quotient ring  $\frac{\mathbb{Z}}{A}$ .

**Solution.** It is easy to verify that  $A$  is an ideal of  $\mathbb{Z}$ . We have  $\frac{\mathbb{Z}}{A} = \{A, 1+A, 2+A, 3+A, 4+A\}$ .

Notice that  $A = \{\dots, -15, -10, -5, 0, 5, 10, 15, \dots\}$ ,

$$1+A = \{\dots, -14, -9, -4, 1, 6, 11, 16, \dots\},$$

$$2+A = \{\dots, -13, -8, -3, 2, 7, 12, 17, \dots\},$$

$$3+A = \{\dots, -12, -7, -2, 3, 8, 13, 18, \dots\},$$

$$4+A = \{\dots, -11, -6, -1, 4, 9, 14, 19, \dots\},$$

$$5+A = A, 6+A = 1+A, 7+A = 2+A$$

etc. etc.

Also

**Example 2.4.2.** In a ring  $R$ , define  $S$  as the set  $\{ab - ba : a, b \in R\}$ . Show that for any ideal  $A$  of  $R$ , the quotient ring  $R/A$  is commutative if and only if  $S \subseteq A$ .

**Solution.**  $R/A$  is commutative

$$\begin{aligned} &\Leftrightarrow (a+A)(b+A) = (b+A)(a+A) \quad \forall a, b \in R \\ &\Leftrightarrow ab + A = ba + A \quad \forall a, b \in R \\ &\Leftrightarrow ab - ba \in A \quad \forall a, b \in R \\ &\Leftrightarrow S \subseteq A. \end{aligned}$$

**Example 2.4.3.** Show that the set  $N$  of all nilpotent elements of a commutative ring  $R$  forms an ideal of  $R$  and the  $R/N$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.

**Solution.** See Example 1.9.13 of Chapter 1.

**Example 2.4.4.** Let  $A$  be an ideal of a commutative ring  $R$ . Let

$$\sqrt{A} = \{x \in R : x^n \in A \text{ for some positive integer } n\}.$$

Show that  $R/\sqrt{A}$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.

**Solution.**  $\sqrt{A}$  is an ideal of  $R$  [See Example 1.9.22. of Chapter 1]

Let  $\bar{r} = r + \sqrt{A}$  be a non-zero, nilpotent element of  $R/\sqrt{A}$

$$\Rightarrow r + \sqrt{A} \neq \sqrt{A} \text{ and } (r + \sqrt{A})^n = \sqrt{A}, \text{ for some positive integer } n.$$

$$\therefore r^n + \sqrt{A} = \sqrt{A} \Rightarrow r^n \in \sqrt{A} \Rightarrow (r^n)^m \in A, \text{ for some positive integer } m$$

$$\Rightarrow r^{nm} \in A, nm \text{ being a positive integer}$$

$$\Rightarrow r \in \sqrt{A} \Rightarrow r + \sqrt{A} = \sqrt{A}, \text{ which is a contradiction.}$$

Hence  $R/\sqrt{A}$  has no non-zero nilpotent elements.

**Theorem 2.4.2. (Fundamental Theorem of Homomorphism)**

Let  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  be a homomorphism of a ring  $R$  onto a ring  $R'$ . Then

$$\frac{R}{\text{Ker } f} \approx R'. \quad [\text{D.U., 1994}]$$

**Proof.** By definition,  $\text{Ker } f = \{x \in R : f(x) = 0' \in R'\}$  and  $\text{Ker } f$  is an ideal of  $R$ . [See Theorem 2.3.3]

Let  $U = \text{Ker } f$ . By Theorem 2.4.1, we have

$$\frac{R}{U} = \{a + U : a \in R\}.$$

We shall prove that  $R/U \approx R'$ . Define a mapping

$$\phi: \frac{R}{U} \rightarrow R' \text{ as } \phi(a + U) = f(a) \quad \forall a \in R. \quad \dots(1)$$

Then  $\phi$  is well-defined, since

$$\begin{aligned} a + U = b + U &\Rightarrow a - b \in U = \text{Ker } f \Rightarrow f(a - b) = 0' \\ &\Rightarrow f(a) - f(b) = 0' \Rightarrow f(a) = f(b), \text{ as } f \text{ is a homo.} \end{aligned}$$

We now proceed to show that  $\phi$  is a homomorphism.

Let  $X = a + U \in R/U, Y = b + U \in R/U$ . Then

$$X + Y = (a + b) + U, XY = ab + U.$$

Using (1), we have

$$\begin{aligned}\phi(X+Y) &= f(a+b) \\ &= f(a)+f(b), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &= \phi(a+U)+\phi(b+U), \text{ by (1)} \\ &= \phi(X)+\phi(Y).\end{aligned}$$

Also  $\phi(XY)=f(ab)$ , by (1)

$$\begin{aligned}&= f(a)f(b), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &= \phi(a+U)\phi(b+U), \text{ by (1)} \\ &= \phi(X)\phi(Y).\end{aligned}$$

Thus  $\phi$  is a homomorphism.

Next we show that  $\phi$  is one-to-one.

Let  $\phi(X)=\phi(Y) \Rightarrow f(a)=f(b)$ , by (1)

$$\begin{aligned}&\Rightarrow f(a)-f(b)=0' \\ &\Rightarrow f(a-b)=0', \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &\Rightarrow a-b \in \text{Ker } f = U \\ &\Rightarrow a+U=b+U \\ &\Rightarrow X=Y.\end{aligned}$$

Thus  $\phi$  is one-to-one.

Lastly, we show that  $\phi$  is onto.

Let  $r' \in R'$  be arbitrary. Since  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  is onto, there exists some  $r \in R$  such that

$$f(r)=r' \quad \text{or} \quad r'=\phi(r+U), \text{ by (1).}$$

Here  $r+U \in R/U$ . Thus  $\phi$  is onto.

We have shown that

$\phi: R/U \rightarrow R'$  is homomorphism, 1 - 1 and onto.

Hence  $R/U \approx R'$  or  $R/\text{Ker } f \approx R'$ .

Equivalently,  $R' \approx R/\text{Ker } f$ .

**Ex. 1.** If  $U$  is any ideal of a ring  $R$ , then  $R/U$  is a homomorphic image of  $R$ . Conversely, if  $f$  is a homomorphism of a ring  $R$  onto a ring  $R'$ , then  $R'$  is isomorphic to a quotient ring of  $R$ .

[Hint. See Theorems 2.4.1 and 2.4.2.]

**Ex. 2.** Show that there exists an onto homomorphism  $f$  from a ring  $R$  to a quotient ring  $R/I$ , where  $I = \text{Ker } f$ .

[Hint. See Theorem 2.4.1.]

**Theorem 2.4.3.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then

$$\frac{A+B}{B} \approx \frac{A}{A \cap B}.$$

[D.U., 1997]

**Proof.** Clearly,  $B$  is an ideal of  $A+B$  and  $A \cap B$  is an ideal of  $A$ . Thus the quotient rings  $(A+B)/B$  and  $A/(A \cap B)$  are defined. We define a mapping  $f: A \rightarrow \frac{A+B}{B}$  as

HOMOMORPHISMS, MAX. & PRIME IDEALS & P.I.D.

...(1)

$$f(a) = a + B \quad \forall a \in A.$$

Notice that  $a = a + 0 \in A + B$  and so  $a + B \in (A + B)/B$ .

Obviously,  $f$  is well-defined, since

$$a = a' \Rightarrow a + B = a' + B.$$

We now proceed to show that  $f$  is a homomorphism.

Let  $x, y \in A$ . Using (1), we have

$$f(x + y) = (x + y) + B = (x + B) + (y + B) = f(x) + f(y),$$

$$f(xy) = xy + B = (x + B)(y + B) = f(x)f(y).$$

and

Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism. Now we show that  $f$  is onto. Let  $X \in (A + B)/B$  be arbitrary. Then  $X = r + B$ , for some  $r \in A + B$ . We can write  $r = a_1 + b_1$ , for some  $a_1 \in A, b_1 \in B$ .

$$\text{Thus } X = a_1 + b_1 + B = a_1 + B. \quad (\because b_1 \in B \Rightarrow b_1 + B = B)$$

$$\text{Using (1), } X = f(a_1), a_1 \in A.$$

It follows that  $f: A \rightarrow (A + B)/B$  is an onto homomorphism.

By Fundamental theorem of homomorphism, we have

$$\frac{A}{\text{Ker } f} \approx \frac{A + B}{B}. \quad \dots(2)$$

We have  $\text{Ker } f = \{x \in A : f(x) = B, \text{ zero of } (A + B)/B\}$ .

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Now } x \in \text{Ker } f &\Leftrightarrow x \in A \text{ and } f(x) = B \\ &\Leftrightarrow x \in A \text{ and } x + B = B, \text{ by (1)} \\ &\Leftrightarrow x \in A \text{ and } x \in B \\ &\Leftrightarrow x \in A \cap B. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3)$$

$$\therefore \text{Ker } f = A \cap B.$$

From (2) and (3), we have

$$\frac{A}{A \cap B} \approx \frac{A + B}{B} \text{ or } \frac{A + B}{B} \approx \frac{A}{A \cap B}.$$

**Theorem 2.4.4.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$ , then

$$\frac{A + B}{A} \approx \frac{B}{A \cap B}. \quad [\text{D.U., 1995}]$$

**Proof.** As done in Theorem 2.4.3, the mapping  $f: B \rightarrow \frac{A + B}{A}$  defined

as  $f(b) = b + A \quad \forall b \in B$  is well-defined and homomorphism.

Also  $f$  is onto. Let  $X \in (A + B)/A$  be arbitrary. Then  $X = r + A$ , for some  $r \in A + B$  i.e.,  $r = a_1 + b_1$ , for some  $a_1 \in A, b_1 \in B$ .

$$\therefore X = a_1 + b_1 + A = b_1 + a_1 + A = b_1 + A, \text{ since } a_1 \in A$$

$$\Rightarrow X = f(b_1), b_1 \in B \Rightarrow f \text{ is onto.}$$

By Fundamental theorem of homomorphism, we obtain

$$\frac{B}{\text{Ker } f} \approx \frac{A + B}{A} \text{ or } \frac{A + B}{A} \approx \frac{B}{\text{Ker } f}, \text{ where}$$

$$\begin{aligned}x \in \text{Ker } f &\Leftrightarrow x \in B \text{ and } f(x) = A \\&\Leftrightarrow x \in B \text{ and } x + A = A \\&\Leftrightarrow x \in B \text{ and } x \in A.\end{aligned}$$

$$\therefore \text{Ker } f = A \cap B.$$

$$\text{Hence } \frac{A+B}{A} \approx \frac{B}{A \cap B}.$$

**Theorem 2.4.5.** If  $A$  and  $B$  are two ideals of a ring  $R$  such that  $B \subseteq A$ , then

$$\frac{R}{A} \approx \frac{R/B}{A/B}.$$

**Proof.** By the given hypothesis, the quotient rings  $\frac{R}{A}$ ,  $\frac{R}{B}$ ,  $\frac{A}{B}$  are meaningful. We define a mapping

$$f: \frac{R}{B} \rightarrow \frac{R}{A} \text{ as } f(r+B) = r+A \quad \forall r \in R. \quad \dots(1)$$

Then  $f$  is well-defined, since

$$\begin{aligned}r_1 + B = r_2 + B &\Rightarrow r_1 - r_2 \in B \Rightarrow r_1 - r_2 \in A, \text{ as } B \subseteq A \\&\Rightarrow r_1 + A = r_2 + A.\end{aligned}$$

Let  $X = x + B$ ,  $Y = y + B \in R/B$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned}X+Y &= x+y+B, XY = xy+B. \text{ Using (1), we obtain} \\f(X+Y) &= x+y+A = (x+A) + (y+A) = f(x+B) + f(y+B) \\&= f(X) + f(Y),\end{aligned}$$

$f(XY) = xy+A = (x+A)(y+A) = f(x+B)f(y+B) = f(X)f(Y).$

Thus  $f$  is a homomorphism.

Now we show that  $f$  is onto.

Let  $S \in R/A$  be arbitrary. Then  $S = r'+A$ , for  $r' \in R$ . Using (1), we get

$$S = f(r'+B), \text{ where } r'+B \in R/B.$$

Thus  $f: R/B \rightarrow R/A$  is an onto homomorphism. By Fundamental theorem of homomorphism, we have

$$\frac{R/B}{\text{Ker } f} \approx \frac{R}{A} \text{ or } \frac{R}{A} \approx \frac{R/B}{\text{Ker } f}.$$

We have  $\text{Ker } f = \{X = x + B \in R/B : f(x+B) = A, \text{ zero of } R/A\}$  ... (2)

Thus  $X \in \text{Ker } f \Leftrightarrow X = x + B \in R/B \text{ and } f(x+B) = A$

$$\begin{aligned}&\Leftrightarrow X = x + B \in R/B \text{ and } x + A \in A, \text{ by (1)} \\&\Leftrightarrow X = x + B \in R/B \text{ and } x \in A \\&\Leftrightarrow X \in A/B.\end{aligned}$$

$$\therefore \text{Ker } f = \frac{A}{B}.$$

From (2) and (3), we have

$$\frac{R}{A} \approx \frac{R/B}{A/B}.$$

## 2.5 Imbedding of Rings

**Definition.** A ring  $R$  is said to be imbedded in a ring  $R'$ , if there exists an isomorphism of  $R$  into  $R'$  i.e., there exists a mapping  $f: R \rightarrow R'$  such that (i)  $f$  is a homomorphism and (ii)  $f$  is one-to-one.

We also say that  $R'$  is an extension ring or over-ring of  $R$ .  
 $R'$  and further  $R$  and  $f(R)$  are isomorphic rings.

[Notice that  $f: R \rightarrow f(R)$  is an onto isomorphism and so  $R = f(R)$ .]  
 Thus upto isomorphism  $R$  is a subring of  $R'$  and it is in this sense that we say  $R$  is imbedded in  $R'$  or  $R'$  is an extension ring or over-ring of  $R$ .

**Theorem 2.5.1.** Every ring can be imbedded in a ring with unity.

**Proof.** Let  $R$  be any ring. We take

$$R \times \mathbf{Z} = \{(r, m) : r \in R, m \in \mathbf{Z}\},$$

$\mathbf{Z}$  denotes the ring of integers.

We define addition and multiplication in  $R \times \mathbf{Z}$  as follow :

$$(r, m) + (s, n) = (r + s, m + n), \quad \dots(1)$$

$$(r, m)(s, n) = (rs + ms + nr, mn). \quad \dots(2)$$

It is clear that  $r + s, rs \in R$  and

$$nr = r + r + \dots + r \text{ (n times)} \in R, ms \in R.$$

Thus  $r + s \in R, rs + ms + nr \in R, m + n \in \mathbf{Z}, mn \in \mathbf{Z}$

and so  $(r, m) + (s, n) \in R \times \mathbf{Z}, (r, m)(s, n) \in R \times \mathbf{Z}$ .

It is easy to verify that  $(R \times \mathbf{Z}, +)$  is an abelian group in which  $(0, 0) \in R \times \mathbf{Z}$  is the additive identity and  $(-r, -m)$  is the additive inverse of  $(r, m) \in R \times \mathbf{Z}$ .

Notice that  $(r, m) + (0, 0) = (r + 0, m + 0) = (r, m)$ ,

and  $(r, m) + (-r, -m) = (r - r, m - m) = (0, 0)$ .

Further, we can verify that

- (i)  $(r, m) \{(s, n)(t, l)\} = \{(r, m)(s, n)\}(t, l)$
- (ii)  $(r, m) \{(s, n) + (t, l)\} = (r, m)(s, n) + (r, m)(t, l)$
- (iii)  $\{(s, n) + (t, l)\}(r, m) = (s, n)(r, m) + (t, l)(r, m)$
- (iv)  $(r, m)(0, 1) = (r, m)$  for all  $(r, m) \in R \times \mathbf{Z}$ .

Let us verify (ii) and (iv).

$$\begin{aligned} \text{L.H.S. of (ii)} &= (r, m)(s + t, n + l), \text{ by (1)} \\ &= (r(s + t) + m(s + t) + (n + l)r, m(n + l)) \\ &= (rs + rt + ms + mt + nr + lr, mn + ml) \\ &= (rs + ms + nr, mn) + (rt + mt + lr, ml) \\ &= (r, m)(s, n) + (r, m)(t, l) = \text{R.H.S. of (ii)}. \end{aligned}$$

Using (2), we see that for each  $(r, m) \in R \times \mathbf{Z}$ ,

$$(r, m)(0, 1) = (r0 + m0 + 1 \cdot r, m \cdot 1) = (r, m).$$

Hence  $R \times \mathbf{Z}$  is a ring with unity  $(0, 1)$ .

Finally, we show that  $R$  can be imbedded in  $R \times \mathbf{Z}$ . We define a mapping

$$f: R \rightarrow R \times \mathbf{Z} \text{ as } f(r) = (r, 0) \quad \forall r \in R.$$

Then  $f$  is well-defined, for  $r = s \Rightarrow (r, 0) = (s, 0)$ .

Also  $f$  is one-to-one, since  $f(r) = f(s) \Rightarrow (r, 0) = (s, 0) \Rightarrow r = s$ .

Next we show that  $f$  is a homomorphism.

Let  $r, s \in R$ . Using (3) and (1), we have

$$f(r+s) = (r+s, 0) = (r+s, 0+0) = (r, 0) + (s, 0) = f(r) + f(s).$$

$$\text{Again } f(rs) = (rs, 0) = (rs+0s+0r, 00) = (r, 0)(s, 0) \\ = f(r)f(s), \text{ using (2).}$$

Hence  $f$  is an isomorphism of  $R$  into  $R \times \mathbf{Z}$  and so  $R$  is imbedded in the ring  $R \times \mathbf{Z}$  with unity  $(0, 1)$ .

**Remark.** If  $R$  is any ring, not necessarily containing unity, then its extension ring with unity is  $R \times \mathbf{Z} = \{(r, m) : r \in R, m \in \mathbf{Z}\}$ .

### 2.5.2 Ring of Endomorphisms of an Abelian Group

Let  $(G, +)$  be an additive abelian group. A homomorphism of  $G$  into  $G$  is called an endomorphism of  $G$  i.e., a mapping  $f: G \rightarrow G$  is an endomorphism, if

$$f(x+y) = f(x) + f(y) \quad \forall x, y \in G.$$

Let  $\text{Hom}(G, G)$  denote the set of all endomorphisms of  $G$ . It is easy to verify that  $\text{Hom}(G, G)$  is a ring w.r.t. the compositions defined as

$$(f+g)(x) = f(x) + g(x) \text{ and } (fg)(x) = f(g(x)) \quad \dots(1)$$

$\forall x \in G$  and  $\forall f, g \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$ .

We verify some of the properties of the ring structure of  $\text{Hom}(G, G)$ .

Let  $f, g \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$  and  $x, y \in G$ . Then

$$(f+g)(x+y) = f(x+y) + g(x+y), \text{ by (1)}$$

$$= f(x) + f(y) + g(x) + g(y),$$

since  $f$  and  $g$  are homomorphisms

$$= f(x) + g(x) + f(y) + g(y),$$

since  $(G, +)$  is abelian

Thus  $f+g$  is a homomorphism and so  $f+g \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$ .

Similarly,  $fg \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$ .

The zero mapping  $O: G \rightarrow G$  defined as  $O(x) = 0 \quad \forall x \in G$  is such that  $O \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$  and  $f+O=f \quad \forall f \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$ .

The additive inverse of  $f \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$  is  $-f \in \text{Hom}(G, G)$ , where  $(-f)(x) = -f(x) \quad \forall x \in G$ .

**Definition.**  $\text{Hom}(G, G)$  is called the ring of endomorphisms of the additive abelian group  $G$ .

**Theorem 2.5.3.** Every ring  $R$  with unity can be imbedded in a ring of endomorphisms of some additive abelian group.

**Proof.** By definition,  $(R, +)$  is an additive abelian group. We write  $(R, +)$  as  $R^+$ . Let  $\text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$  denote the set of all endomorphisms of  $R^+$ . Then  $\text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$  is a ring of endomorphisms of  $R^+$  w.r.t. the compositions defined as

$$(f+g)(x) = f(x) + g(x), (fg)(x) = f(g(x)) \quad \dots(1)$$

$\forall x \in R^+ \text{ and } \forall f, g \in \text{Hom}(R^+, R^+).$

We shall prove that  $R$  can be imbedded in  $\text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$ .

For each  $a \in R$ , we define

$$f_a : R^+ \rightarrow R^+ \text{ as } f_a(x) = ax \quad \forall x \in R^+. \quad \dots(2)$$

Let  $x, y \in R^+$ . Then by (2), we obtain

$$f_a(x+y) = a(x+y) = ax + ay = f_a(x) + f_a(y).$$

Thus  $f_a$  is a homomorphism of  $R^+$  into  $R^+$ .

It follows that  $f_a \in \text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$  for each  $a \in R$ .

We define a mapping  $\theta : R \rightarrow \text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$  as

$$\theta(a) = f_a \quad \forall a \in R. \quad \dots(3)$$

Firstly, we show that  $\theta$  is one-to-one.

Let  $a, b \in R$  be such that  $\theta(a) = \theta(b)$ . Then by (3), we see that

$$\begin{aligned} f_a = f_b &\Rightarrow f_a(x) = f_b(x) \quad \forall x \in R^+ \\ &\Rightarrow ax = bx \quad \forall x \in R^+, \text{ by (2)} \\ &\Rightarrow a \cdot 1 = b \cdot 1, \text{ as } 1 \in R^+ \\ &\Rightarrow a = b \\ &\Rightarrow \theta \text{ is one-to-one.} \end{aligned}$$

Next we show that  $\theta$  is a homomorphism.

Let  $a, b \in R$ . Using (3), we have

$$\theta(a+b) = f_{a+b}, \theta(ab) = f_{ab}. \quad \dots(4)$$

For any  $x \in R^+$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} f_{a+b}(x) &= (a+b)x, \text{ by (2)} \\ &= ax + bx \\ &= f_a(x) + f_b(x), \text{ by (2)} \\ &= (f_a + f_b)(x), \text{ by (1).} \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5)$$

$$\therefore f_{a+b} = f_a + f_b.$$

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Again, by (2), } f_{ab}(x) &= (ab)x = a(bx) = ay, y = bx \in R \\ &= f_a(y), \text{ by (2)} \\ &= f_a(bx) = f_a(f_b(x)), \text{ by (2)} \\ &= (f_a f_b)(x), \text{ by (1).} \end{aligned} \quad \dots(6)$$

$$f_{ab} = f_a f_b.$$

$\therefore$

Using (5) and (6) in (4), we get

$$\theta(a+b) = f_a + f_b = \theta(a) + \theta(b), \text{ by (3)}$$

and

$$\theta(ab) = f_a f_b = \theta(a) \theta(b), \text{ by (3).}$$

Thus  $\theta$  is a homomorphism. We have proved earlier that  $\theta$  is one-to-one and so  $\theta$  is an isomorphism of  $R$  into  $\text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$ . Hence  $R$  is imbedded in  $\text{Hom}(R^+, R^+)$ .

**Theorem 2.5.4.** Every ring  $R$  can be imbedded in a ring of endomorphisms of some additive abelian group.

**Proof.** By Theorem 2.5.1,  $R$  can be imbedded in a ring  $R_1$  with unity i.e., there exists an isomorphism  $f: R \rightarrow R_1$ . Since  $R_1$  is a ring with unity, by Theorem 2.5.3,  $R_1$  can be imbedded in a ring  $R_2$  of endomorphisms of some additive abelian group i.e., there exists an isomorphism  $g: R_1 \rightarrow R_2$ . Hence  $gof: R \rightarrow R_2$  is an isomorphism and the theorem is proved.

**Theorem 2.5.5.** Show that  $\text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}^+, \mathbf{Z}^+)$  is isomorphic to  $\mathbf{Z}$ , where  $\mathbf{Z}^+$  is the additive abelian group  $(\mathbf{Z}, +)$ .

**Proof.** Define a mapping  $\theta: \mathbf{Z} \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}^+, \mathbf{Z}^+)$  by

$$\theta(a) = f_a \quad \forall a \in \mathbf{Z},$$

where

$$f_a(x) = ax \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{Z}^+. \quad \dots(1)$$

As proved in Theorem 2.5.3,  $\theta$  is a ring homomorphism and one-to-one. We now proceed to show that  $\theta$  is onto. Let  $f \in \text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}^+, \mathbf{Z}^+)$  be arbitrary i.e.,  $f: \mathbf{Z}^+ \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}^+$  is a homomorphism.

Since  $f(1) \in \mathbf{Z}^+$ , let us take  $f(1) = m \in \mathbf{Z}^+$ .

We shall prove that  $f = \theta(m) = f_m$ .

If  $x$  is a positive integer, then

$$\begin{aligned} f(x) &= f(\underbrace{1 + 1 + \dots + 1}_{x \text{ times}}) \\ &= f(1) + f(1) + \dots + f(1), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &\quad \underbrace{\phantom{f(1) + f(1) + \dots + f(1)}}_{x \text{ times}} \\ &= x \cdot f(1) = xm = mx. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(2)$$

Using (1),  $f(x) = f_m(x)$ , if  $x$  is a positive integer.

If  $x$  is a negative integer, then  $x = -y$ , for some positive integer  $y$ . Consequently,

$$\begin{aligned} f(x) &= f(-y) = -f(y), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &= -my, \text{ by (2)} \\ &= m(-y) = mx = f_m(x), \text{ by (1)}. \end{aligned}$$

$\therefore f(x) = f_m(x)$ , if  $x$  is a negative integer.

## HOMOMORPHISMS, MAX. & PRIME IDEALS & P.I.D.

If  $x = 0$ , then  $f(0) = 0$ , since  $f$  is a homomorphism  
 $= m0 = f_m(0)$ .

Thus  $f(x) = f_m(x) \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{Z}$ .

...(3)

$\Rightarrow f = f_m = \theta(m), m \in \mathbf{Z}$ , which proves that  $\theta$  is onto.

Hence  $\mathbf{Z} \approx \text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}^+, \mathbf{Z}^+)$  or  $\text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}^+, \mathbf{Z}^+) \approx \mathbf{Z}$ .

Ex. Let  $f: (\mathbf{Z}, +) \rightarrow (\mathbf{Z}, +)$  be a homomorphism. Show that  $f(x) = mx$  for some integer  $m$ . Also show that  $f_k: (\mathbf{Z}, +) \rightarrow (\mathbf{Z}, +)$  such that  $f_k(x) = kx$  is a homomorphism for each integer  $k$ . Let

$\text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{Z}) = \{f: (\mathbf{Z}, +) \rightarrow (\mathbf{Z}, +) \text{ is a homomorphism}\}$ .

Prove that  $\theta: \mathbf{Z} \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{Z})$  given by  $\theta(K) = f_k$  is an isomorphism [D.U., 1998]

of rings.

Hint. Refer to Theorems 2.5.3 and 2.5.5. The mapping  $f_k: (\mathbf{Z}, +) \rightarrow (\mathbf{Z}, +)$  defined by  $f_k(x) = kx$  is a homomorphism, since  $f_x(x+y) = k(x+y) = kx+ky = f_k(x) + f_k(y)$ .

The mapping  $\theta: \mathbf{Z} \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{Z})$  defined by  $\theta(k) = f_k$  is an isomorphism. [See (3) to (6) of Theorem 2.5.3]

By Theorem 2.5.5, if  $f$  is any homomorphism of  $(\mathbf{Z}, +)$  into  $(\mathbf{Z}, +)$ , then  $f(x) = f_m(x) = mx$  for some integer  $m$ . [See (3) of Theorem 2.5.5]

**Theorem 2.5.6.** Every integral domain can be imbedded in a field. [D.U., 1996]

**Proof.** Let  $D$  be any integral domain. We take  
 $M = \{(a, b) : a, b \in D \text{ and } b \neq 0\}$ .

We define a relation  $\sim$  on  $M$  as follows :

$$(a, b) \sim (c, d) \Leftrightarrow ad = bc.$$

We proceed to show that  $\sim$  an equivalence relation. We shall use the fact that  $D$  is commutative and cancellation laws hold in  $D$ .

(i)  $(a, b) \sim (a, b)$ , since  $ab = ba$  is true in  $D$ .

(ii) Let  $(a, b) \sim (c, d)$ . Then by (1), we have

$$ad = bc \Rightarrow cb = da \Rightarrow (c, d) \sim (a, b).$$

(iii) Let  $(a, b) \sim (c, d)$  and  $(c, d) \sim (e, f)$ . Then by (1), we have  
 $ad = bc$  and  $cf = de \Rightarrow bcf = bde \Rightarrow adf = bde \Rightarrow daf =dbe$

$\Rightarrow af = be$ , since  $d \neq 0$  and cancellation law holds in  $D$

$\Rightarrow (a, b) \sim (e, f)$ .

Thus  $\sim$  is an equivalence relation on  $M$ . Let  $[a, b]$  denote the equivalence class of  $(a, b) \in M$  i.e.,

$$[a, b] = \{(x, y) \in M : (x, y) \sim (a, b)\}.$$

Clearly,  $[a, b] = [c, d] \Leftrightarrow (a, b) \sim (c, d) \Leftrightarrow ad = bc$ .

Let  $F = \{[a, b] : a, b \in D \text{ and } b \neq 0\}$ .

...(2)

We shall prove that  $F$  is a field w.r.t. the compositions defined as

$$[a, b] + [c, d] = [ad + bc, bd], \quad \dots(3)$$

$$[a, b] [c, d] = [ac, bd], \quad \dots(4)$$

Think of  $[a, b]$  as  $\frac{a}{b}$ , so that

$$[a, b] + [c, d] = \frac{a}{b} + \frac{c}{d} = \frac{ad + bc}{bd}, \quad [a, b] [c, d] = \frac{a}{b} \cdot \frac{c}{d} = \frac{ac}{bd}. \quad \left. \right]$$

Firstly, we need to show that these compositions are well-defined i.e., to show

$$[a, b] = [a', b'] \text{ and } [c, d] = [c', d'] \quad \dots(5)$$

imply  $[ad + bc, bd] = [a'd' + b'c', b'd']$  and  $[ac, bd] = [a'c', b'd']$ .

From the relations (5) and (2), we obtain

$$ab' = ba' \text{ and } cd' = dc' \quad \dots(6)$$

We have  $acb'd' = ab'cd'$ , since  $D$  is commutative

$$= ba'dc', \text{ using (6)}$$

$$= bda'c', \text{ since } D \text{ is commutative.}$$

Thus  $acb'd' = bda'c' \Rightarrow [ac, bd] = [a'c', b'd']$ , using (2).

Again,  $(ad + bc)b'd' = adb'd' + bcb'd'$

$$= ab'dd' + bb'cd', \text{ since } D \text{ is commutative}$$

$$= ba'dd' + bb'dc', \text{ using (6)}$$

$$= bda'd' + bd'b'c', \text{ since } D \text{ is commutative}$$

$$= bd(a'd' + b'c').$$

This proves  $[ad + bc, bd] = [a'd' + b'c', b'd']$ , using (2).

Hence the compositions (3) and (4) are well-defined.

Let  $[a, b], [c, d], [e, f]$  be any three elements of  $F$ .

Since  $b \neq 0, d \neq 0 \in D$  and  $D$  is an integral domain,  $bd \neq 0 \in D$ .

It follows, by (3) and (4), that

$$[a, b] + [c, d] \in F \text{ and } [a, b] [c, d] \in F.$$

It is easy to verify that

(i)  $[a, b] + [c, d] = [c, d] + [a, b]$ , since  $D$  is commutative.

(ii)  $\{[a, b] + [c, d]\} + [e, f] = [a, b] + \{[c, d] + [e, f]\}$ .

(iii) There exists an element  $[0, p] \in F$  such that

$$[a, b] + [0, p] = [a, b] \quad \forall [a, b] \in F,$$

for  $[a, b] + [0, p] = [ap + b \cdot 0, bp] = [ap, bp] = [a, b]$ , using (3) and (2).

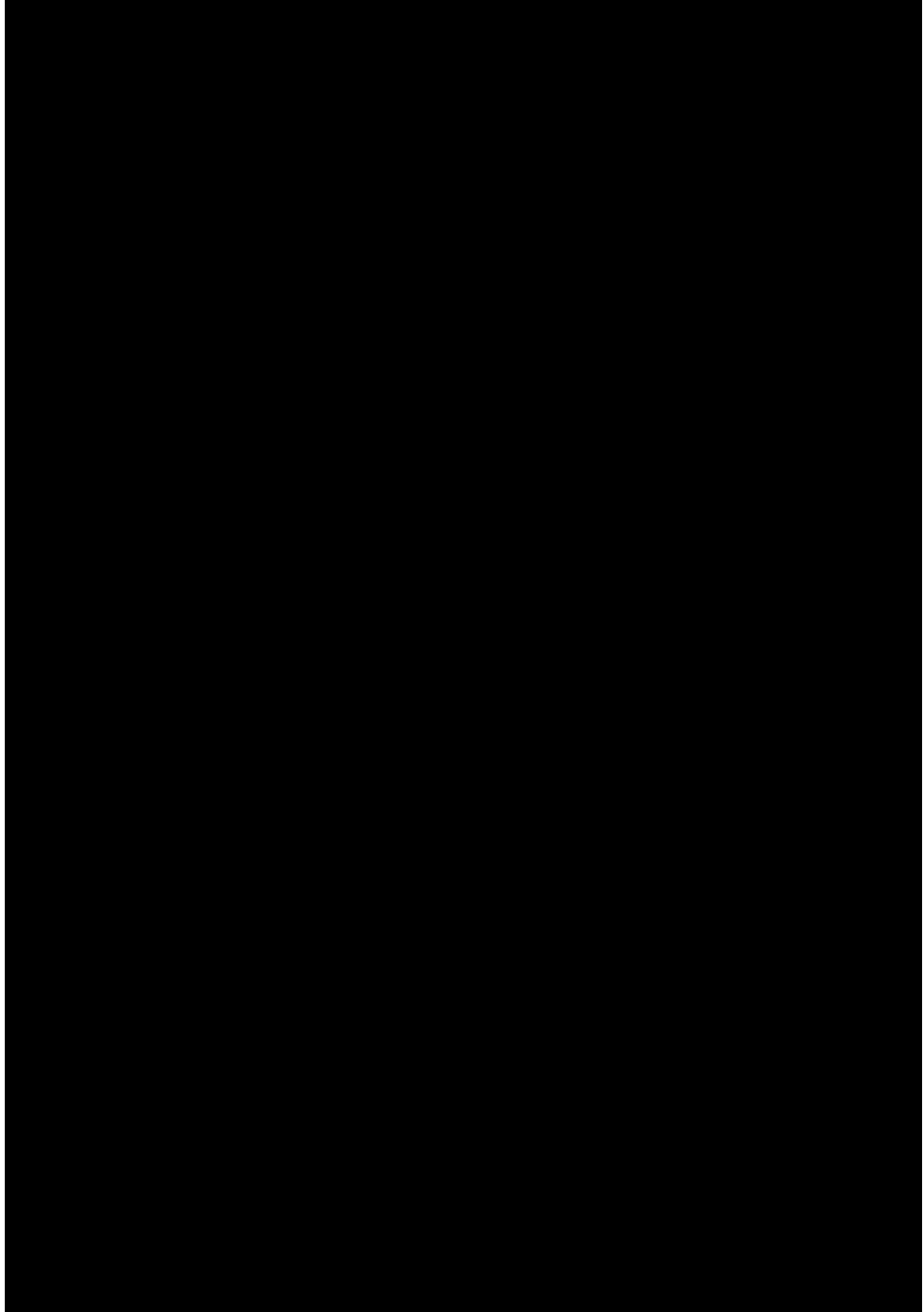
Notice that  $(ap)b = (bp)a$ , since  $D$  is commutative

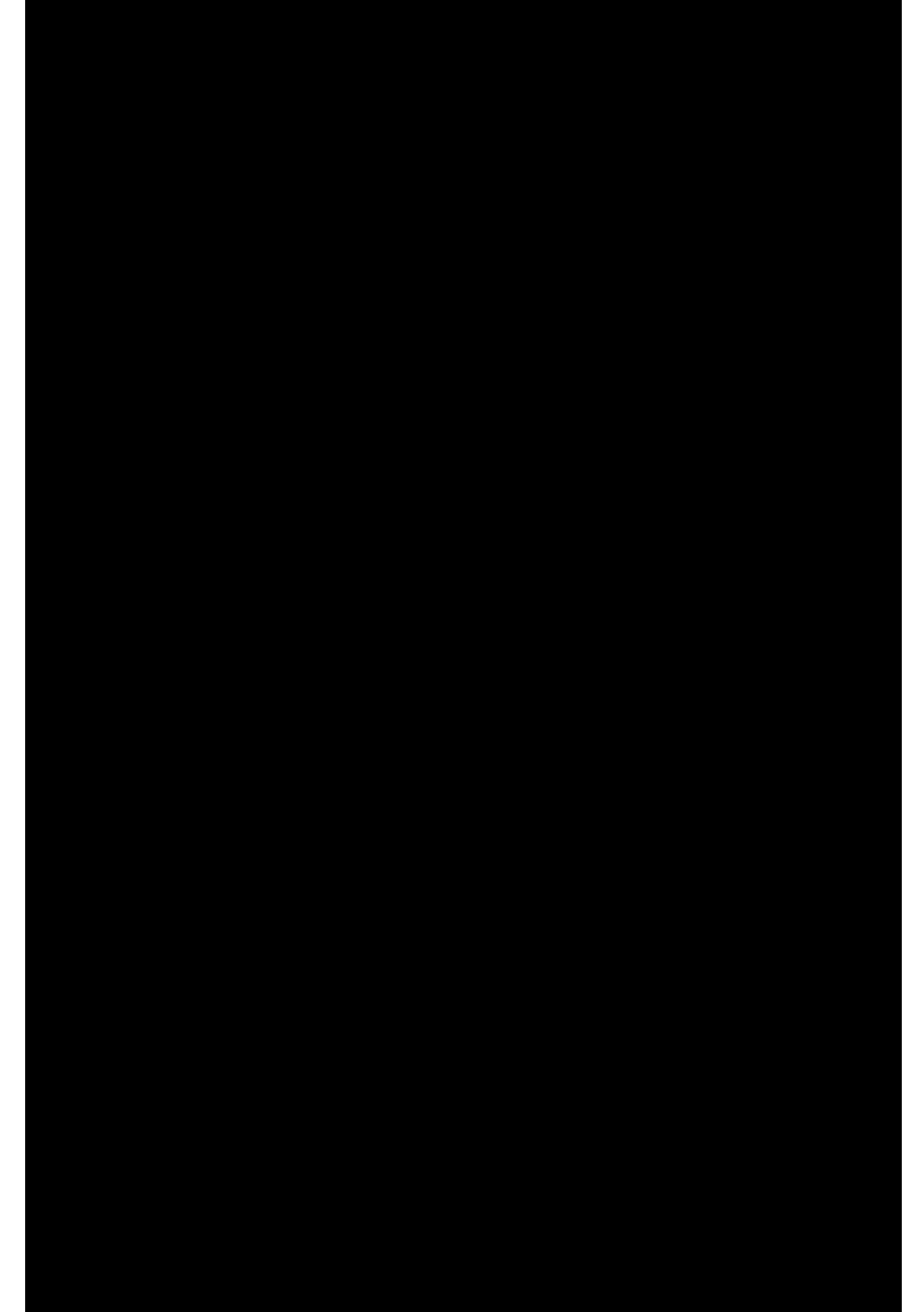
$$\therefore [ap, bp] = [a, b], \text{ by (2).}$$

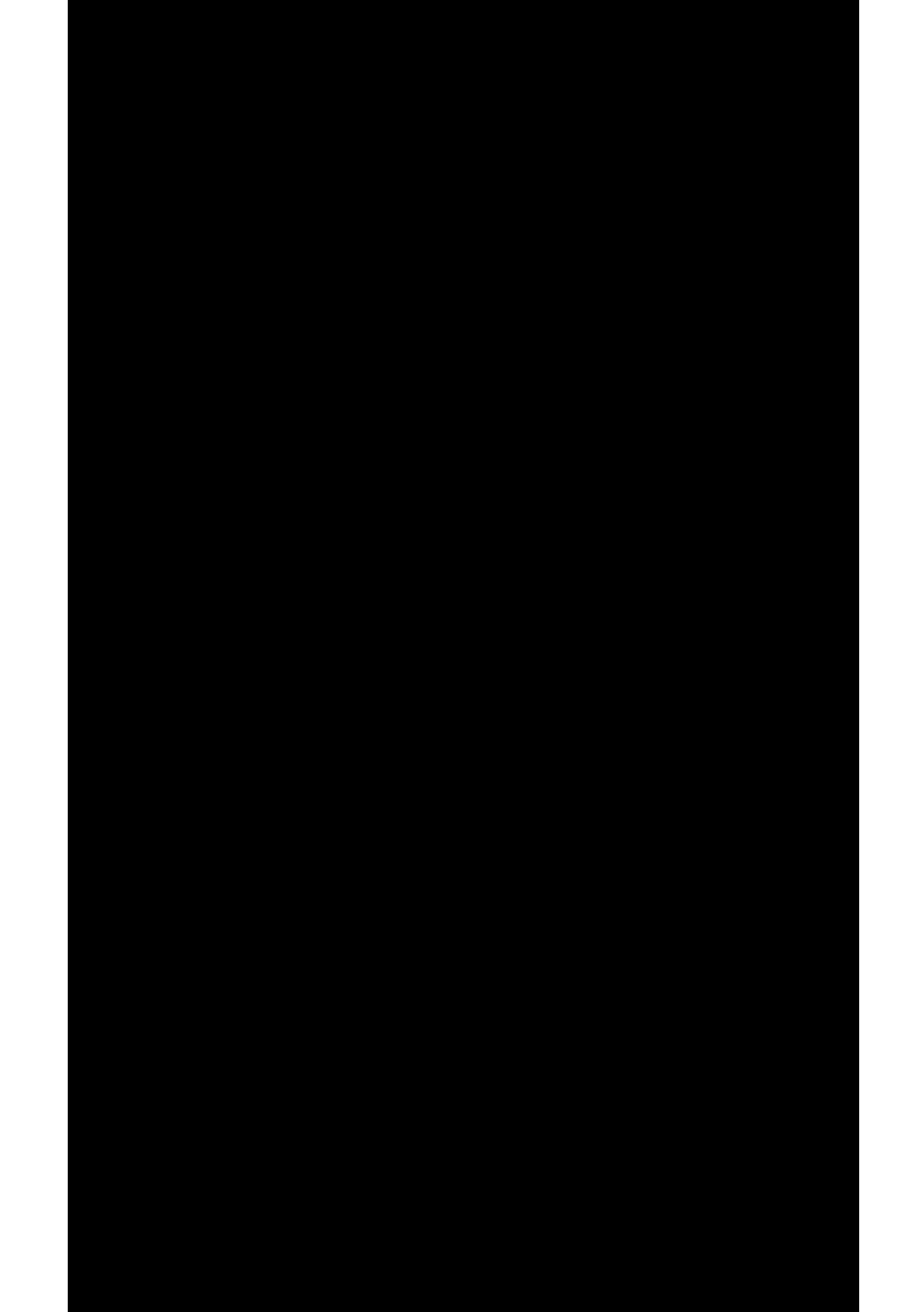
(iv) The negative of  $[a, b] \in F$  is  $[-a, b] \in F$ ,

for  $[a, b] + [-a, b] = [ab - ba, b^2] = [0, b^2] = [0, p]$ , using (3) and (2).

[Notice that  $0 \cdot p = b^2 \cdot 0 \Rightarrow [0, b^2] = [0, p]$ , by (2)]







$$(v) [a, b] [c, d] = [ac, bd] = [ca, db] = [c, d] [a, b], \text{ by (4).}$$

$$(vi) \{[a, b] [c, d]\} [e, f] = [ac, bd] [e, f], \text{ by (4)}$$

$$= [(ac)e, (bd)f], \text{ by (4)}$$

$$= [a(ce), b(df)], \text{ by associative law in } D$$

$$= [a, b] [ce, df], \text{ by (4)}$$

$$= [a, b] \{[c, d] [e, f]\}.$$

(vii) For any  $p \neq 0 \in D$ ,  $[p, p]$  is the unity of  $F$ , since  
 $[a, b] [p, p] = [ap, bp] = [a, b]$ , using (4) and (2).

[Notice that  $(ap)b = (bp)a$  is true, as  $D$  is commutative  
 $\therefore [ap, bp] = [a, b]$ , by (2).]

(viii) Each non-zero element of  $F$  has its multiplicative inverse in  $F$ .  
Let  $[a, b] \neq [0, p]$ . Then  $a \neq 0$  and so  $[b, a] \in F$ . We have  
 $[a, b] [b, a] = [ab, ba] = [p, p]$ , by (4) and (2).

[Notice that  $(ab)p = (ba)p$  is true, as  $D$  is commutative.  
 $\therefore [ab, ba] = [p, p]$ .]

Thus  $[b, a]$  is the multiplicative inverse of  $[a, b] \neq [0, p]$ .

$$(ix) [a, b] \{[c, d] + [e, f]\} = [a, b] [c, d] + [a, b] [e, f].$$

This property can be easily verified by using (3) and (4).

*Hence  $F$  is a field. Finally, we show that  $D$  can be imbedded in  $F$ .*

We define a mapping

$$f: D \rightarrow F \text{ as } f(a) = [ap, p] \quad \forall a \in D. \quad \dots(7)$$

Here  $p \neq 0 \in D$  is a fixed, but an arbitrary element of  $D$ .

Then  $f$  is well-defined, since

$$a = b \Rightarrow ap^2 = bp^2 \Rightarrow [ap, p] = [bp, p], \text{ by (2).}$$

Also  $f$  is one-to-one, since

$$f(a) = f(b) \Rightarrow [ap, p] = [bp, p], \text{ by (7)}$$

$$\Rightarrow ap \cdot p = b \cdot bp, \text{ by (2)}$$

$$\Rightarrow ap^2 = bp^2, \text{ since } D \text{ is commutative}$$

$$\Rightarrow a = b, \text{ since } p^2 \neq 0 \text{ and cancellation law holds in } D.$$

Now we show that  $f$  is a homomorphism. Let  $a, b \in D$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} f(a+b) &= [(a+b)p, p], \text{ by (7)} \\ &= [(a+b)p^2, p^2], \text{ using (2)} \\ &= [ap^2 + bp^2, p^2] \\ &= [ap, p] + [bp, p], \text{ by (3)} \\ &= f(a) + f(b), \text{ by (7).} \end{aligned}$$

82

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Again } f(ab) &= [(ab)p, p], \text{ by (7)} \\ &= [(ab)p^2, p^2], \text{ by (2)} \\ &= [ap, bp, p.p], \text{ since } D \text{ is commutative} \\ &= [ap, p] [bp, p], \text{ by (4)} \\ &= f(a)f(b). \end{aligned}$$

It follows that  $f$  is an isomorphism of  $D$  into  $F$ . Hence the given integral domain  $D$  is imbedded in the field  $F$ .

The field  $F = \{[a, b] : a, b \in D \text{ and } b \neq 0\}$  is called **field of quotients** or **quotient field** of the integral domain  $D$ .

**Definition.** The quotient field of an integral domain  $D$  may be defined as a pair  $(F, f)$ , where  $F$  is a field and  $f: D \rightarrow F$  is an isomorphism such that each  $x \in F$  is expressible as the equivalence class  $[f(a), f(b)]$  or  $\frac{f(a)}{f(b)}$  for some  $a, b \in D$  and  $b \neq 0$ .

**Remark.** The field of quotients of the integral domain  $\mathbf{Z}$  of integers is  $\mathbf{Q}$  (all rational numbers).

**Ex. 1.** Define the quotient field of an integral domain. Prove that every integral domain can be imbedded in its quotient field. [D.U., 1996]

**Ex. 2.** Show that the quotient field of the integral domain  $\mathbf{E}$  of even integers is  $\mathbf{Q}$ .

**Ex. 3.** Find the field of quotients of the integral domain  $3\mathbf{Z}$ .

(Ans. Q)

**Ex. 4.** Show that the quotient field of the integral domain  $\mathbf{Z}[i] = \{a + bi : a, b \in \mathbf{Z}\}$  is  $K = \{x + yi : x, y \in \mathbf{Q}\}$ .

**Solution.** If  $F$  be the quotient field of  $\mathbf{Z}[i]$ , then  $\alpha \in F$  implies

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha &= \frac{a+bi}{c+di} \quad (a, b, c, d \in \mathbf{Z} \text{ and } c+di \neq 0) \Rightarrow \alpha = \frac{(a+bi)(c-di)}{(c+di)(c-di)} \\ &\Rightarrow \alpha = p + qi, \text{ where } p = \frac{ac+bd}{c^2+d^2} \in \mathbf{Q}, q = \frac{bc-ad}{c^2+d^2} \in \mathbf{Q} \\ &\Rightarrow \alpha \in K \Rightarrow F \subseteq K. \end{aligned}$$

Conversely, any  $\beta \in K$  is expressible as

$$\begin{aligned} \beta &= \frac{a_1}{b_1} + \frac{a_2}{b_2} i; a_1, a_2, b_1, b_2 \text{ are integers and } b_1 \neq 0, b_2 \neq 0 \\ \Rightarrow \beta &= \frac{a_1 b_2 + b_1 a_2}{b_1 b_2 + 0i} \in F \Rightarrow K \subseteq F. \text{ Hence } F = K. \end{aligned}$$

**Ex. 5.** Show that the quotient field of the integral domain  $\mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{2}] = \{m+n\sqrt{2} : m, n \in \mathbf{Z}\}$  is  $\{x+y\sqrt{2} : x, y \in \mathbf{Q}\}$ .

Hint. Proceed like Ex. 4.

**Ex. 6.** Show that  $\mathbf{R}$  (field of real numbers) can be imbedded in  $\mathbf{C}$  (field of complex numbers).

Hint.  $f: \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$  defined as  $f(x) = x + 0i \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{R}$  is one-to-one and homomorphism.

**Ex. 7.** Prove that the mapping  $\phi: D \rightarrow F$  defined by  $\phi(a) = [a, 1]$  is an isomorphism of  $D$  into  $F$ .

**Ex. 8.** Let  $D$  be an integral domain;  $a, b \in D$ . Suppose that  $a^n = b^n$  and  $a^m = b^m$  for two relatively prime integers  $m$  and  $n$ . Prove that  $a = b$ .

[D.U., 2000, 1995]

**Solution.** Let  $a = 0$ . Then  $a^n = 0$  and so  $b^n = 0$  ( $\because a^n = b^n$ ).

Now  $b^n = 0 \Rightarrow b.b \dots b$  ( $n$  times) = 0.

Thus  $b = 0$ , since  $D$  is an integral domain.

$\therefore a = b$ . Similarly, if  $b = 0$ , then  $a = 0$  and so  $a = b$ .

We now consider the case when  $a \neq 0$  and  $b \neq 0$ .

Since  $D$  is an integral domain,  $D$  can be imbedded in a field  $F$ .

Let  $f: D \rightarrow F$  be an isomorphism. We have

$$\begin{aligned} \{f(a)\}^n &= f(a) \cdot f(a) \dots f(a) \text{ (n times)} \\ &= f(a \cdot a \dots a), \text{ since } f \text{ is a homomorphism} \\ &= f(a^n) = f(b^n), \text{ since } a^n = b^n \\ &= f(b \cdot b \dots b) \\ &= f(b) \cdot f(b) \dots f(b) \text{ (n times), as } f \text{ is a homo.} \end{aligned}$$

...(1)

$$\therefore \{f(a)\}^n = \{f(b)\}^n. \quad \dots(2)$$

Similarly,  $\{f(a)\}^m = \{f(b)\}^m$ .

Since  $n$  and  $m$  are relatively prime integers, there exist two integers  $p$  and  $q$  such that  $np + mq = 1$ . Now

$$\begin{aligned} f(a) &= \{f(a)\}^{np + mq} = [\{f(a)\}^n]^p \cdot [\{f(a)\}^m]^q \\ &= [\{f(b)\}^n]^p \cdot [\{f(b)\}^m]^q, \text{ by (1) and (2)} \\ &= \{f(b)\}^{np} \cdot \{f(b)\}^{mq} = \{f(b)\}^{np + mq} = f(b). \end{aligned}$$

$\therefore f(a) = f(b) \Rightarrow a = b$ , since  $f$  is one-to-one.

**Remark 1.** In the relation  $np + mq = 1$ , one of the integers  $p$  and  $q$  is necessarily negative. If  $p$  is negative, then  $p = -l$ , for some positive integer  $l$ . Consequently,  $a^p = (a^{-1})^l$ , which may not exist in  $D$ . However,  $F$  being a field,

$$\{f(a)\}^p = [\{f(a)\}^{-1}]^l \in F, \text{ as } f(a) \neq 0 \in F.$$

**Remark 2.** The conclusion of the above problem may not hold, if  $D$  is not an integral domain.

The ring  $\mathbf{Z}_8 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7\}$  of integers modulo 8 is not an integral domain, since  $2 \neq 0$  and  $4 \neq 0$ , but  $2 \otimes_8 4 = 0 \in \mathbf{Z}_8$ .

We take  $a = 2, b = 4 \in \mathbf{Z}_8, m = 3, n = 4$ .

We take  $a = 2, b = 4 \in \mathbf{Z}_8$ , satisfying

Then  $m$  and  $n$  are relatively prime integers satisfying

$$a^m = 2^3 = 0 \text{ in } \mathbf{Z}_8, b^m = 4^3 = 0 \text{ in } \mathbf{Z}_8;$$

$$a^n = 2^4 = 0 \text{ in } \mathbf{Z}_8, b^n = 4^4 = 0 \text{ in } \mathbf{Z}_8.$$

$$a^m = b^m \text{ and } a^n = b^n, (n, m) = 1, \text{ but } a \neq b.$$

$\therefore$

**Theorem 2.5.7.** Let  $F$  be the field of quotients of an integral domain  $D$ . Prove that if  $K$  is any field which contains  $D$ , then  $K$  contains a subfield  $f(F)$  isomorphic to  $F$ .

Or

Show that the quotient field  $F$  of an integral domain  $D$  is the smallest field containing  $D$ .

**Proof.** We have  $D \subseteq K$ . The quotient field of  $D$  is

$$F = \{[a, b] : a, b \in D \text{ and } b \neq 0\}.$$

Let  $[a, b] \in F$  be arbitrary. Then  $a \in D, b \neq 0 \in D$  imply  $a \in K$  and  $b \neq 0 \in K \Rightarrow ab^{-1} \in K$ , since  $K$  is a field.

Define a mapping  $f: F \rightarrow K$  as

$$f\{[a, b]\} = ab^{-1} \quad \forall [a, b] \in F.$$

Then  $f$  is well-defined, since

$$[a, b] = [c, d] \Rightarrow ad = bc \Rightarrow b^{-1}a = cd^{-1} \Rightarrow ab^{-1} = cd^{-1}$$

[Notice that  $b \neq 0, d \neq 0 \in D \Rightarrow b \neq 0, d \neq 0 \in K \Rightarrow b^{-1}, d^{-1} \in K$ ]  
Further  $f$  is one-to-one, since

$$\begin{aligned} f\{[a, b]\} &= f\{[c, d]\} \Rightarrow ab^{-1} = cd^{-1}, \text{ by (1)} \\ \Rightarrow b^{-1}a &= cd^{-1}, \text{ since } K \text{ is commutative} \\ \Rightarrow ad &= bc \Rightarrow [a, b] = [c, d]. \end{aligned}$$

Lastly, we show  $f$  is a homomorphism.  
Let  $[a, b], [c, d] \in F$ . Then

$$[a, b] + [c, d] = [ad + bc, bd], \quad [a, b][c, d] = [ac, bd].$$

Using (1), we have

$$\begin{aligned} f\{[a, b] + [c, d]\} &= (ad + bc)(bd)^{-1} \text{ in } K \\ &= (ad + bc)(d^{-1}b^{-1}) \text{ in } K \\ &= add^{-1}b^{-1} + bcd^{-1}b^{-1} \\ &= ab^{-1} + cd^{-1}, \text{ since } K \text{ is commutative} \\ &= f\{[a, b]\} + f\{[c, d]\}, \text{ by (1).} \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} f\{[a, b][c, d]\} &= f\{[ac, bd]\} = (ac)(bd)^{-1}, \text{ by (1)} \\ &= acd^{-1}b^{-1} = ab^{-1}cd^{-1}, \text{ as } K \text{ is commutative} \\ &= f\{[a, b]\} f\{[c, d]\}, \text{ by (1)} \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $f: F \rightarrow K$  is an isomorphism. Since  $F$  is a field,  $f(F)$  is a subfield of  $K$ . Consequently,

$f: F \rightarrow f(F)$  is 1-1, onto and homomorphism.

$\therefore F \approx f(F)$  and  $f(F)$  is a subfield of  $K$ .

Hence  $K$  contains a subfield  $f(F)$  which is isomorphic to  $F$ .

In this sense, we say that  $F$  is the smallest field containing  $D$ .